

**Cambridge Books Online**

<http://ebooks.cambridge.org/>



Communication Complexity

Eyal Kushilevitz, Noam Nisan

Book DOI: <http://dx.doi.org/10.1017/CBO9780511574948>

Online ISBN: 9780511574948

Hardback ISBN: 9780521560672

Paperback ISBN: 9780521029834

Chapter

Preface pp. x-xiv

Chapter DOI: <http://dx.doi.org/10.1017/CBO9780511574948.001>

Cambridge University Press

# Preface

---

This book surveys the mathematical field of *communication complexity*. Whereas the original motivation for studying this issue comes from computer systems and the operations they perform, the underlying issues can be neatly abstracted mathematically. This is the approach taken here.

## Communication

The need for communication arises whenever two or more computers, components, systems, or humans (in general, “parties”) need to jointly perform a task that none of them can perform alone. This may arise, for example, due to the lack of resources of any single party or due to the lack of data available to any single party.

In many cases, the need for communication is explicit: When we search files on a remote computer it is clear that the requests and answers are actually communicated (via electrical wires, optical cables, radio signals, etc.). In other cases, the communication taking place is more implicit: When a single computer runs a program there is some communication between the different parts of the computer, for example, between the CPU and the memory, or even among different parts of the CPU. In yet other cases, there is no real communication going on but it is still a useful abstraction. For a problem whose solution relies on several pieces of data, we can imagine that these *pieces of data* need to communicate with each other in order to solve the problem; in reality, of course, this communication will be achieved by a processor accessing them all.

## Complexity

The notion of complexity is becoming more and more central in many branches of science and in particular in the study of various types of computation. In the field of *computational complexity* the central question is always “how complicated” a given problem is, rather than “what is a solution” to the problem.

The problems we will be dealing with here can all be solved trivially if unlimited communication is allowed. What we will be studying is *how much* communication is

necessary to solve a given problem. The amount of communication needed is what we will call the communication complexity of the problem. We should emphasize: Communication complexity is an inherent property of a *problem*, not of any particular solution for the problem. We may design many solutions for any given problem, solutions whose efficiency may vary widely. The communication complexity is the cost of the most efficient solution for the problem.

Any study of communication complexity should be contrasted with Shannon's classical *information theory*. In information theory, the starting point is a certain communication that needs to take place; for example, one computer wishes to send certain data to another computer. Information theory then deals with the issue of how this communication can be carried out: what codes to use, how to deal with faulty communication links, what communication rates can be achieved, and so forth. In communication complexity, on the other hand, the starting point is a problem to be solved; for example, multiply two numbers, each stored on a different computer. Communication complexity then deals with *what* needs to be communicated in order to solve this problem.

## This Book

The simplest mathematical scenario that captures many of the issues of communication is the two-party model suggested by Yao in 1979. This model has been quite extensively studied, is reasonably well understood, and exhibits beautiful structure. The first part of this book, Chapters 1–4, is devoted to this model.

In the second part of the book, Chapters 5–7, we look at several more complicated scenarios in which communication occurs. Each of these scenarios is intended to highlight an issue that was not dealt with by Yao's model. The models we present include those known as “variable partition models,” “communication complexity of relations,” and “multiparty protocols.”

In the third part of the book, we demonstrate the general applicability of the notions studied in the first two parts. We present many examples of computation, in different models and settings, in which communication plays an important, usually implicit, role. In each of these examples, we use the results obtained in the study of communication complexity to prove theorems regarding the model of computation in question. Most of these applications yield *lower bounds*; that is, we prove that any solution of certain problems in the model cannot be too efficient due to the (implicit or explicit) communication needs of the problem. The models we deal with include Turing machines, boolean circuits, computer networks, VLSI circuits, data structures, pseudorandomness, and more.

The mathematical background needed for reading this book includes the material of basic courses in linear algebra, probability theory, and discrete mathematics. For the convenience of the reader, we include in Appendix B some definitions and facts related to these areas. These, however, are meant to refresh the memory of a reader who have seen this material in the past and cannot serve as an introduction to any of these areas.

The reader is encouraged not to skip over the examples given throughout the book. These examples, although sometimes containing some of the more sophisticated

mathematics in this book, do not just exemplify general theorems and ideas. They are an integral part of the presentation and contain a significant portion of the material.

Throughout the book we tried to provide many exercises. Some of these exercises are very simple, whereas others are quite complicated. Solutions for few of these exercises are given in Appendix C and the corresponding exercises are marked by “\*” (these are typically exercises that are nontrivial and for which the solution is interesting).

At the end of each chapter we include a “Bibliographic Notes” section that gives references for the results mentioned throughout the chapter as well as pointers to further readings. In spite of our sincere efforts, it may be that some appropriate references were not included. We apologize to our colleagues for any such case. Please inform us about this as well as about any other mistakes you may find or any comments that you may have.

### The Flow of Chapters

There are several ways to use this book. The obvious one is to read it from the beginning to the end. This may be the best way for those readers who are interested in a thorough understanding of the area. It is also possible to read this book in an “application-driven” manner. You should read Chapter 1 first and then proceed by focusing on an application

| To read . . .          | read first . . .        |
|------------------------|-------------------------|
| Sections 8.1 and 8.3   | Chapter 7               |
| Section 8.2            | Chapter 3               |
| Section 9.1            | Chapter 7               |
| Sections 9.2 and 9.3   | Section 4.3             |
| Chapter 10             | Chapter 5               |
| Section 10.4           | Chapter 2               |
| Section 10.5           | Section 4.2             |
| Section 11.1           | Chapter 7               |
| Section 11.2           | Chapter 3 and Chapter 7 |
| Section 11.3           | Chapter 6               |
| Sections 12.3 and 12.4 | Chapter 7               |
| Section 13.1           | Section 3.4             |
| Section 13.2           | Section 4.4             |
| Section 13.3           | Section 3.5             |

**Figure 0.1:** Organization

from the third part of the book and reading from Chapters 2–7 only the material that is needed by the application. Figure 0.1 summarizes what material is needed by each application.

This book may be used in a graduate course in several ways. A general course in concrete computational complexity may include only the material in Chapter 1 and an application or two (for example, for Turing machines or decision trees). A course devoted to communication complexity may cover all of Chapters 1, 2, and 3 and a significant portion of the rest of the book.

## Acknowledgments

We have greatly benefited by many, many discussions with several of our colleagues. It is very clear to us that this book has been deeply influenced by them, and we sincerely wish to thank all of them. In particular, we thank Laci Babai, Peter Bro Miltersen, Benny Chor, Thomas Feder, Oded Goldreich, Johan Håstad, Russell Impagliazzo, Mauricio Karchmer, Richard Karp, Ilan Kremer, Nati Linial, Yishay Mansour, Moni Naor, Ilan Newman, Rafi Ostrovsky, Michael Rabin, Dana Ron, Steven Rudich, Muli Safra, Mike Sipser, Jiri Sgall, Madhu Sudan, Mario Szegedy, Amnon Ta-Shma, Umesh Vazirani, and Avi Wigderson.

The first author thanks Benny Chor for introducing him to the area of communication complexity (back in 1989). The second author thanks Avi Wigderson for being a constant source of ideas and knowledge. We wish to thank Jiri Sgall and Daniel Lewin for reading an early version of this book and for giving us many useful comments and suggestions. We thank Amos Beimel, who was forced to listen (and verify) some proofs and ideas from this book. We also thank our editor, Lauren Cowles, for sharing with us her experience and for giving us advice.

We have been helped by several existing manuscripts: Richard Karp’s lecture notes on concrete complexity, Laci Lovasz’s survey of Communication Complexity, T. Lengauer’s survey on VLSI theory, and Benny Chor’s personal notes, which served as the basis for Section 4.6.

The first step toward writing this book was taken when the second author presented a series of lectures on communication complexity at a workshop organized by Pierre McKenzie and Denny Thérien and held in Barbados in the winter of 1993. We thank Pierre and Denny for suggesting communication complexity as a worthwhile topic. The material in this book has been presented by the first author at class given in the Technion in the fall of 1994. We thank the students in this class and the Teaching Assistant, Amos Beimel, for their feedback. In particular, some of the solutions (and exercises) are based on their excellent homework.

Eyal Kushilevitz, Dept. of Computer Science, Technion, Haifa 32000, Israel.  
 e-mail: [eyalk@cs.technion.ac.il](mailto:eyalk@cs.technion.ac.il)  
<http://www.cs.technion.ac.il/~eyalk>

Noam Nisan, Dept. of Computer Science, Hebrew University, Jerusalem, Israel.  
 e-mail: [noam@cs.huji.ac.il](mailto:noam@cs.huji.ac.il)  
<http://www.cs.huji.ac.il/~noam>



# Contents

---

---

|   |           |
|---|-----------|
| Preface   | x         |
| <b>I Two-Party Communication Complexity</b>               | <b>1</b>  |
| <b>1 Basics</b>   | <b>3</b>  |
| <b>1.1 The Model</b>                                      | 3         |
| <b>1.2 Rectangles</b>                                     | 7         |
| <b>1.3 Fooling Sets and Rectangle Size</b>                | 10        |
| <b>1.4 Rank Lower Bound</b>                               | 13        |
| <b>1.5 Bibliographic Notes</b>                            | 14        |
| <b>2 More on Covers</b>                                   | <b>16</b> |
| <b>2.1 Covers and Nondeterminism</b>                      | 16        |
| <b>2.2 Communication Complexity Versus Protocol Cover</b> | 19        |
| <b>2.3 Determinism Versus Nondeterminism</b>              | 20        |
| <b>2.4 Rectangle Size and Covers</b>                      | 23        |
| <b>2.5 On Rank and Covers</b>                             | 25        |
| <b>2.6 Bibliographic Notes</b>                            | 27        |
| <b>3 Randomization</b>                                    | <b>28</b> |
| <b>3.1 Basic Definitions</b>                              | 28        |
| <b>3.2 Randomization Versus Determinism</b>               | 31        |
| <b>3.3 Public Coin Versus Private Coin</b>                | 32        |
| <b>3.4 Distributional Complexity</b>                      | 35        |
| <b>3.5 Discrepancy</b>                                    | 38        |
| <b>3.6 Bibliographic Notes</b>                            | 40        |
| <b>4 Advanced Topics</b>                                  | <b>42</b> |
| <b>4.1 Direct Sum</b>                                     | 42        |

## CONTENTS

|              |  |            |
|--------------|--|------------|
| <b>4.1.1</b> | The Randomized Case                              | 44         |
| <b>4.1.2</b> | The Nondeterministic Case                        | 46         |
| <b>4.1.3</b> | The Deterministic Case                           | 47         |
| <b>4.2</b>   | Rounds   | 49         |
| <b>4.3</b>   | Asymmetric Communication                         | 54         |
| <b>4.4</b>   | Pseudorandomness                                 | 57         |
| <b>4.5</b>   | Reductions and Complexity Classes                | 58         |
| <b>4.6</b>   | The Disjointness Function                        | 60         |
| <b>4.7</b>   | Communication with Partial Information           | 64         |
| <b>4.8</b>   | Bibliographic Notes                              | 67         |
| <b>II</b>    | <b>Other Models of Communication</b>             | <b>69</b>  |
| <b>5</b>     | <b>The Communication Complexity of Relations</b> | <b>71</b>  |
| <b>5.1</b>   | Basic Examples                                   | 74         |
| <b>5.2</b>   | The Pair–Disjointness Relation                   | 77         |
| <b>5.3</b>   | The FORK Relation                                | 79         |
| <b>5.4</b>   | Bibliographic Notes                              | 82         |
| <b>6</b>     | <b>Multiparty Communication Complexity</b>       | <b>83</b>  |
| <b>6.1</b>   | The “Number on the Forehead” Model               | 83         |
| <b>6.2</b>   | Cylinder Intersections                           | 85         |
| <b>6.3</b>   | Bounds Using Ramsey Theory                       | 87         |
| <b>6.4</b>   | Discrepancy Lower Bound                          | 89         |
| <b>6.4.1</b> | The Discrepancy of GIP                           | 91         |
| <b>6.5</b>   | Simultaneous Protocols                           | 92         |
| <b>6.6</b>   | Bibliographic Notes                              | 95         |
| <b>7</b>     | <b>Variable Partition Models</b>                 | <b>97</b>  |
| <b>7.1</b>   | Worst-Case Partition                             | 97         |
| <b>7.2</b>   | Best-Case Partition                              | 99         |
| <b>7.3</b>   | Best Partition with Information Overlap          | 101        |
| <b>7.4</b>   | Bibliographic Notes                              | 103        |
| <b>III</b>   | <b>Applications</b>                              | <b>105</b> |
| <b>8</b>     | <b>Networks, Communication, and VLSI</b>         | <b>107</b> |
| <b>8.1</b>   | Bisection Width of Networks                      | 107        |
| <b>8.2</b>   | Total Communication                              | 110        |
| <b>8.3</b>   | $AT^2$ Lower Bounds for VLSI                     | 112        |
| <b>8.4</b>   | Bibliographic Notes                              | 113        |
| <b>9</b>     | <b>Decision Trees and Data Structures</b>        | <b>114</b> |
| <b>9.1</b>   | Decision Trees                                   | 114        |

|                          |  |            |
|--------------------------|--|------------|
| <b>9.2</b>               | Data Structures and the Cell Probe Model     | 116        |
| <b>9.3</b>               | Dynamic Data Structures                      | 117        |
| <b>9.4</b>               | Bibliographic Notes                          | 118        |
| <b>10</b>                | <b>Boolean Circuit Depth</b>                 | <b>119</b> |
| <b>10.1</b>              | Introduction                                 | 119        |
| <b>10.2</b>              | The Connection to Communication Complexity   | 121        |
| <b>10.3</b>              | Matching and <i>ST</i> -Connectivity         | 124        |
| <b>10.4</b>              | Set Cover                                    | 126        |
| <b>10.5</b>              | Monotone Constant-Depth Circuits             | 128        |
| <b>10.6</b>              | Bibliographic Notes                          | 129        |
| <b>11</b>                | <b>More Boolean Circuit Lower Bounds</b>     | <b>131</b> |
| <b>11.1</b>              | Small Circuits                               | 131        |
| <b>11.2</b>              | Depth 2 Threshold Circuits                   | 133        |
| <b>11.3</b>              | Size–Depth Tradeoffs: An Approach            | 135        |
| <b>11.4</b>              | ACC Circuits                                 | 136        |
| <b>11.5</b>              | Bibliographic Notes                          | 137        |
| <b>12</b>                | <b>Time and Space</b>                        | <b>139</b> |
| <b>12.1</b>              | Time–Space Tradeoffs for Turing Machines     | 139        |
| <b>12.2</b>              | One-Tape Turing Machines                     | 142        |
| <b>12.3</b>              | Ordered Binary Decision Diagrams (OBDDs)     | 143        |
| <b>12.4</b>              | Width–Length Tradeoff for Branching Programs | 145        |
| <b>12.5</b>              | Bibliographic Notes                          | 146        |
| <b>13</b>                | <b>Randomness</b>                            | <b>148</b> |
| <b>13.1</b>              | Quasirandom Graphs                           | 148        |
| <b>13.2</b>              | Deterministic Amplification                  | 150        |
| <b>13.3</b>              | Slightly Random Sources                      | 152        |
| <b>13.4</b>              | Bibliographic Notes                          | 154        |
| <b>14</b>                | <b>Further Topics</b>                        | <b>156</b> |
| <b>14.1</b>              | Noisy Channels                               | 156        |
| <b>14.2</b>              | Communication–Space Tradeoffs                | 156        |
| <b>14.3</b>              | Privacy                                      | 157        |
| <b>14.4</b>              | Algebraic Communication Complexity           | 158        |
| <b>14.5</b>              | Two-Sided Cards                              | 158        |
| <b>Index of Notation</b> |  | <b>160</b> |
| <b>A</b>                 | <b>Mathematical Background</b>               | <b>162</b> |
| <b>A.1</b>               | Asymptotics                                  | 162        |
| <b>A.2</b>               | Linear Algebra                               | 163        |
| <b>A.3</b>               | Probability Theory                           | 166        |

**CONTENTS**

|                                     |            |
|-------------------------------------|------------|
| <b>Answers to Selected Problems</b> | <b>168</b> |
| <b>Bibliography</b>                 | <b>176</b> |
| <b>Index</b>                        | <b>186</b> |



**PART ONE**

# **Two-Party Communication Complexity**



## Cambridge Books Online

<http://ebooks.cambridge.org/>



Communication Complexity

Eyal Kushilevitz, Noam Nisan

Book DOI: <http://dx.doi.org/10.1017/CBO9780511574948>

Online ISBN: 9780511574948

Hardback ISBN: 9780521560672

Paperback ISBN: 9780521029834

Chapter

1 - Basics pp. 3-15

Chapter DOI: <http://dx.doi.org/10.1017/CBO9780511574948.002>

Cambridge University Press

## CHAPTER 1

# Basics

---

The general communication problem may be described in the following terms: A system must perform some task that depends on information distributed among the different parts of the system (called *processors*, *parties*, or *players*). The players thus need to communicate with each other in order to perform the task. Yao's model of communication complexity, which is the subject of this chapter, is the simplest scenario in which such a situation occurs. Yao's model makes the following simplifying assumptions:

- There are only two parts in the system.
- Each part of the system gets a fixed part of the input information.
- The only resource we care about is communication.
- The task is the computation of some prespecified function of the input.

These assumptions help us concentrate on the core issue of communication. Despite its apparent simplicity, this is a very rich model that exhibits a nice structure and in which issues such as randomization and nondeterminism, among others, can be studied. We can also translate our understanding of this model to many other scenarios in which communication is a key issue.

### 1.1. The Model

Let  $X, Y, Z$  be arbitrary finite sets and let  $f : X \times Y \rightarrow Z$  be an arbitrary function. There are two players, Alice and Bob, who wish to evaluate  $f(x, y)$ , for some inputs  $x \in X$  and  $y \in Y$ . The difficulty is that Alice only knows  $x$  and Bob only knows  $y$ . Thus, to evaluate the function, they will need to communicate with each other. The communication will be carried out according to some fixed protocol  $\mathcal{P}$  (which depends only on  $f$ ). The protocol consists of the players sending bits to each other until the value of  $f$  can be determined.

At each stage, the protocol  $\mathcal{P}$  (for the function  $f$ ) must determine whether the run terminates; if the run has terminated, the protocol must specify the answer given by the

protocol (that is,  $f(x, y)$ ); and if the run has not terminated, the protocol must specify which player sends a bit of communication next. This information must depend solely on the bits communicated so far during this run of the protocol, because this is the only knowledge common to both Alice and Bob. In addition, if it is Alice's turn to speak (that is, to communicate a bit), the protocol must specify what she sends; this depends on the communication so far as well as on  $x$ , the input visible to Alice. Similarly, if it is Bob's turn to speak, the protocol must specify what he sends; this depends on the communication so far and on  $y$ , his input.

We are only interested in the amount of communication between Alice and Bob, and we wish to ignore the question of the internal computations each of them makes. Thus, we allow Bob and Alice to have unlimited computational power. The cost of a protocol  $\mathcal{P}$  on input  $(x, y)$  is the number of bits communicated by  $\mathcal{P}$  on input  $(x, y)$ . The cost of a protocol  $\mathcal{P}$  is the *worst case* (that is, maximal) cost of  $\mathcal{P}$  over all inputs  $(x, y)$ . The complexity of  $f$  is the minimum cost of a protocol that computes  $f$ .

To formalize this model from the players' point of view, we could define functions specifying who speaks at each point (for example,  $\text{NEXT}: \{0, 1\}^* \rightarrow \{\text{Alice}, \text{Bob}\}$ ), what they say, when they stop speaking, and what the answer is. Since we do not want to run the protocol but to analyze it, the following formalization, from the protocol designer's point of view, will be more convenient:

**Definition 1.1:** A protocol  $\mathcal{P}$  over domain  $X \times Y$  with range  $Z$  is a binary tree where each internal node  $v$  is labeled either by a function  $a_v: X \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$  or by a function  $b_v: Y \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$ , and each leaf is labeled with an element  $z \in Z$ .

The value of the protocol  $\mathcal{P}$  on input  $(x, y)$  is the label of the leaf reached by starting from the root, and walking on the tree. At each internal node  $v$  labeled by  $a_v$ , walking left if  $a_v(x) = 0$  and right if  $a_v(x) = 1$ , and at each internal node labeled by  $b_v$ , walking left if  $b_v(y) = 0$  and right if  $b_v(y) = 1$ . The cost of the protocol  $\mathcal{P}$  on input  $(x, y)$  is the length of the path taken on input  $(x, y)$ . The cost of the protocol  $\mathcal{P}$  is the height of the tree.

Intuitively, each internal node  $v$  labeled by a function  $a_v$  corresponds to a bit sent by Alice (the bit being  $a_v(x)$ ) and each internal node  $v$  labeled by  $b_v$  corresponds to a bit sent by Bob. Figure 1.1 shows a protocol tree for some (Boolean) function  $f$  defined on  $X \times Y$  for  $X = \{x, x', x'', x'''\}$  and  $Y = \{y, y', y'', y'''\}$ . The function  $f$  computed by this protocol appears in Figure 1.2. For example, on input  $(x'', y)$  the path followed by the protocol is the rightmost path of the tree. The value computed by the protocol is therefore 0. Also note that the value of the function  $a_4$  on  $x$  and  $x'$  may be arbitrary. This is because  $a_1(x) = a_1(x') = 0$  and therefore input pairs in which the value given to Alice is either  $x$  or  $x'$  take the left edge going from the root and hence  $a_4$  will never be evaluated for such inputs.

**Definition 1.2:** For a function  $f: X \times Y \rightarrow Z$ , the (deterministic) communication complexity of  $f$  is the minimum cost of  $\mathcal{P}$ , over all protocols  $\mathcal{P}$  that compute  $f$ . We denote the (deterministic) communication complexity of  $f$  by  $D(f)$ .

Sometimes we consider slight variations of this model. For example, in our model the value of the protocol must be evident solely from the communication exchanged

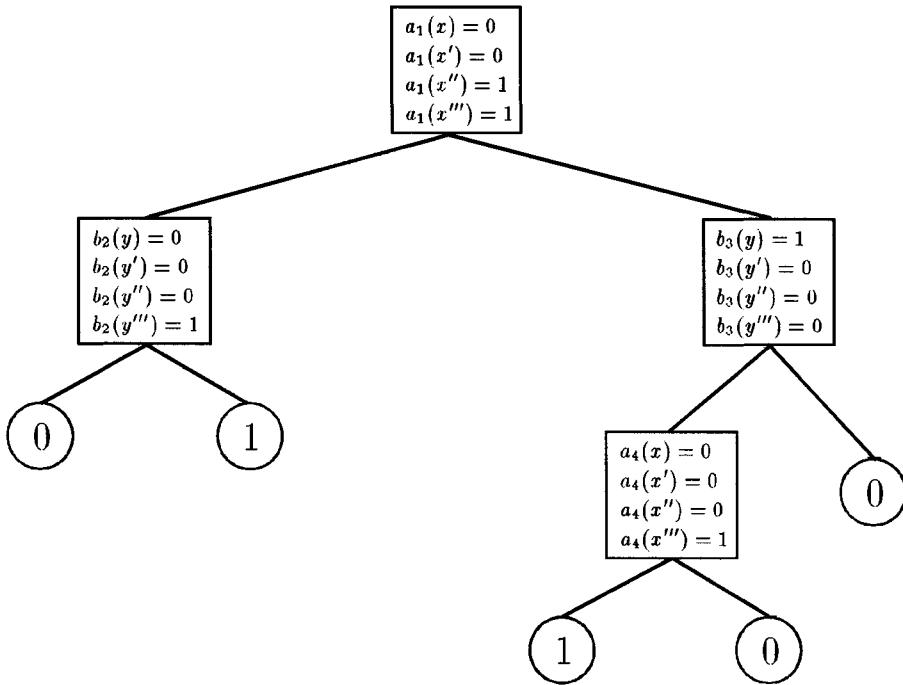


Figure 1.1: A protocol tree

|        | $y$ | $y'$ | $y''$ | $y'''$ |
|--------|-----|------|-------|--------|
| $x$    | 0   | 0    | 0     | 1      |
| $x'$   | 0   | 0    | 0     | 1      |
| $x''$  | 0   | 0    | 0     | 0      |
| $x'''$ | 0   | 1    | 1     | 1      |

Figure 1.2: The function  $f$  computed by the protocol of Figure 1.1

by the parties (this is implicit in the definition by the requirement that the protocol terminates only at leaves where the output is uniquely defined). We may relax this by requiring that only one of the parties knows the answer. This changes the complexity by at most  $\log_2 |Z|$ . In our model, the order of communication between the two parties is arbitrary. We may require that Alice and Bob each send one bit in her/his turn. This changes the complexity by at most a factor of two.

The simplest way for Alice and Bob to evaluate a function  $f$  is for one of the players, say Alice, to send all her input to Bob (requiring  $\log_2 |X|$  bits using an appropriate encoding), for Bob to compute  $f(x, y)$  privately (with his unlimited computational power), and then for Bob to send the answer back to Alice ( $\log_2 |Z|$  more bits). We thus have:

**Proposition 1.3:** For every function  $f : X \times Y \rightarrow Z$ ,

$$D(f) \leq \log_2 |X| + \log_2 |Z|.$$

► **Example 1.4:** Alice and Bob hold subsets  $x, y \subseteq \{1, \dots, n\}$  respectively and they wish to compute  $\text{MAX}(x, y)$ , the maximal number in  $x \cup y$ . For this, Alice sends to Bob the maximal number in  $x$  ( $\log n$  bits). Bob compares this value with the maximal number in  $y$  and sends the larger of them as the output ( $\log n$  bits). Therefore,  $D(\text{MAX}) \leq 2 \log n$ .

**Exercise 1.5:** Alice and Bob hold subsets  $x, y \subseteq \{1, \dots, n\}$ , respectively, and they wish to compute  $\text{AVG}(x, y)$ , which is defined as the average number in the multiset  $x \cup y$ . Prove that  $D(\text{AVG}) = O(\log n)$ . (Note that the average need not be an integer.)

In many cases more clever protocols can be designed.

► **Example 1.6:** Alice and Bob hold subsets  $x, y \subseteq \{1, \dots, n\}$ , respectively.  $\text{MED}(x, y)$  is defined to be the median of the multiset  $x \cup y$  (if  $x \cup y$  contains an even number  $t = 2k$  of (not necessarily distinct) elements, then the median is defined as (say) the  $k$ -th smallest element). By Proposition 1.3,  $D(\text{MED}) \leq n + \log_2 n$  (observe that a subset of  $\{1, \dots, n\}$  can be represented using an  $n$ -bit string).

A better protocol for MED may proceed using binary search as follows: At each stage Alice and Bob have an interval  $[i, j]$  in which the median may still lie. They halve the interval by deciding whether the median is above or below  $k = (i + j)/2$ . This is done by Alice sending to Bob the number of elements in  $x$  that lie above  $k$  and the number that lie below  $k$  ( $O(\log n)$  bits). Bob can now decide whether the median lies above or below  $k$ , and he sends this information to Alice (1 bit). This protocol has  $O(\log n)$  stages and each requires  $O(\log n)$  bits of communication, so  $D(\text{MED}) = O(\log^2 n)$ .

**Exercise 1.7\***: Give an  $O(\log n)$  bit protocol for MED.

**Exercise 1.8\*:** Given any graph  $G$  on  $n$  vertices, we define the following “clique vs. independent set” problem with respect to  $G$ : Alice receives as an input  $C$ , which is a clique in  $G$  (a set of vertices with an edge between any two of them). Bob receives as an input  $I$ , which is an independent set in  $G$  (a set of vertices with no edges between them). The function  $\text{cis}_G(C, I)$  is defined as the size of  $C \cap I$  (observe that this size is either 0 or 1). Prove that  $D(\text{cis}_G) = O(\log^2 n)$ , for all  $G$ . (A lower bound better than  $\Omega(\log n)$  is not known for any  $G$ .)

As these examples show, Yao’s communication complexity model is quite powerful and allows the design of “clever” protocols. Our main concern will be proving lower bounds on communication complexity: Given a function  $f$ , we would like to prove that in any protocol that computes  $f$  at least a certain number of bits must be exchanged. For functions with a large range, the following trivial lower bound is often useful.

**Exercise 1.9:** Show that for every function  $f : X \times Y \rightarrow Z$ ,  $D(f) \geq \log_2 |\text{Range}(f)|$ , where  $\text{Range}(f)$  is the set of all  $z \in Z$  for which there exists a pair  $(x, y) \in X \times Y$  such

that  $f(x, y) = z$ . Conclude that for the function MED the upper bound of Exercise 1.7 is tight (up to a constant).

For the case we are mostly concerned with, that is *Boolean* functions  $f : X \times Y \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$ , this bound only says that  $D(f) \geq 1$  and is therefore useless.

From this point on, unless explicitly stated, we always assume  $Z = \{0, 1\}$ . Most of the techniques we present easily extend to the nonboolean case. In other cases, bounds can be obtained by considering the functions  $f_i(x, y)$ , the  $i$ -th bit of  $f(x, y)$ , instead of considering  $f$ . These functions are Boolean, hence our techniques can be applied. Also, in the Boolean case, we will often not insist that the output be clear from the communication because with a +1 increase in the communication complexity this property can be achieved.

## 1.2. Rectangles

The success in proving good lower bounds on the communication complexity of various functions comes from the *combinatorial* view we take on protocols. The idea is to view protocols as a way to partition the space of all possible input pairs,  $X \times Y$ , into sets such that for all input pairs in the same set the same communication is sent during the execution of the protocol. In the terminology of protocol trees this means that the inputs in each set are those inputs that reach a certain leaf. Then, we show that these sets of inputs are restricted to have a very special structure. This restriction is imposed by the fact that Alice sees only  $x$  and Bob sees only  $y$ . This leads to the introduction of the most fundamental element in the combinatorics of protocols – the (*combinatorial*) *rectangle*.

**Definition 1.10:** Let  $\mathcal{P}$  be a protocol and  $v$  be a node of the protocol tree.  $R_v$  is the set of inputs  $(x, y)$  that reach node  $v$ .

It immediately follows that:

**Proposition 1.11:** If  $L$  is the set of leaves of a protocol  $\mathcal{P}$ , then  $\{R_\ell\}_{\ell \in L}$  is a partition of  $X \times Y$ .

The structure of the sets  $R_\ell$  (and more generally the sets  $R_v$ ) is not at all arbitrary. The study of this structure is at the center of our approach to communication complexity.

**Definition 1.12:** A combinatorial rectangle (in short, a rectangle) in  $X \times Y$  is a subset  $R \subseteq X \times Y$  such that  $R = A \times B$  for some  $A \subseteq X$  and  $B \subseteq Y$ .

An equivalent definition is given by the following proposition.

**Proposition 1.13:**  $R \subseteq X \times Y$  is a rectangle if and only if

$$(x_1, y_1) \in R \text{ and } (x_2, y_2) \in R \Rightarrow (x_1, y_2) \in R.$$

PROOF:

**Only if:** Assume  $R$  is a rectangle, that is  $R = A \times B$ . If  $(x_1, y_1) \in R$ , then  $x_1 \in A$ . Similarly, because  $(x_2, y_2) \in R$ , then  $y_2 \in B$ . It follows that  $(x_1, y_2) \in A \times B = R$ .

**If:** Define the sets

$$A = \{x \mid \text{exists } y \text{ such that } (x, y) \in R\}$$

and

$$B = \{y \mid \text{exists } x \text{ such that } (x, y) \in R\}.$$

We claim that  $R = A \times B$ . The inclusion  $R \subseteq A \times B$  is clear from the definition of  $A$  and  $B$  ( $(x, y) \in R$  implies  $x \in A$  and  $y \in B$  hence  $(x, y) \in A \times B$ ). To show that  $A \times B \subseteq R$ , consider  $(x, y) \in A \times B$ . Since  $x \in A$  there exists  $y'$  such that  $(x, y') \in R$ . Similarly, because  $y \in B$  there exists  $x'$  such that  $(x', y) \in R$ . Using the assumption this implies  $(x, y) \in R$ .  $\square$

The connection between rectangles and communication complexity is given by the following proposition:

**Proposition 1.14:** *For every protocol  $\mathcal{P}$  and leaf  $\ell$  in it,  $R_\ell$  is a rectangle.*

PROOF: We will prove by induction on the depth of  $v$  that  $R_v$  is a rectangle. For the root, it is clear that  $R_{\text{root}} = X \times Y$ , which is a rectangle. Otherwise, let  $w$  be the parent of  $v$  and assume, without loss of generality, that  $v$  is the left son of  $w$  and that in  $w$  Alice speaks (that is,  $w$  is labeled with a function  $a_w : X \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$ ). Then

$$R_v = R_w \cap \{(x, y) \mid a_w(x) = 0\}.$$

By the induction hypothesis,  $R_w = A_w \times B_w$ , and thus

$$R_v = (A_w \cap \{x \mid a_w(x) = 0\}) \times B_w$$

which is a rectangle.  $\square$

Note that the proof shows that all the sets  $R_v$  are rectangles and not only those corresponding to leaves of the tree. It may be instructive to see another proof of this proposition using the second definition of a rectangle, given by Proposition 1.13.

PROOF: Assume  $(x_1, y_1) \in R_\ell$  and  $(x_2, y_2) \in R_\ell$ , we will show that also  $(x_1, y_2) \in R_\ell$ , that is, we will show that on input  $(x_1, y_2)$  the protocol will behave the same as on  $(x_1, y_1)$  and  $(x_2, y_2)$ . We will follow the communication performed (that is, the path taken) on input  $(x_1, y_2)$  and show that it never deviates from the path to  $\ell$ . If we have reached a node  $v$  on the path in which Alice speaks, then because she cannot distinguish between  $(x_1, y_2)$  and  $(x_1, y_1)$  (in both cases, she evaluates  $a_v(x_1)$ ) she will behave the same on both inputs. Thus, on  $(x_1, y_2)$  we will also move toward  $\ell$ . If we have reached a node  $v$  in which Bob speaks then because Bob cannot distinguish between  $(x_1, y_2)$  and  $(x_2, y_2)$  he will behave the same on both inputs, that is, again we will move toward  $\ell$ .  $\square$

|     | 000 | 001 | 010 | 011 | 100 | 101 | 110 | 111 |
|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|
| 000 | 0   | 1   | 1   | 0   | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   |
| 001 | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 1   |
| 010 | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   |
| 011 | 0   | 0   | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 1   |
| 100 | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 1   | 0   | 0   | 1   |
| 101 | 1   | 1   | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 1   | 1   |
| 110 | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   |
| 111 | 0   | 1   | 1   | 0   | 1   | 1   | 0   | 1   |

**Figure 1.3:** A 0-monochromatic rectangle

In both proofs the reason  $R_\ell$  is a rectangle is that Alice and Bob each know only one of the inputs  $x$  and  $y$ . The second proof is in fact a “cut-and-paste” argument: We take the way Alice behaves out of the communication on  $(x_1, y_1)$ , and the way Bob behaves out of the communication on  $(x_2, y_2)$ , and we put them together to get the communication on  $(x_1, y_2)$ . This kind of argument is found in many other proofs, especially those that deal with crossing sequences. Indeed, as is shown in Part III of this book, in many cases we can reprove results that were initially proved with crossing sequences using communication complexity. The new proofs do not repeat the cut-and-paste argument, thus abstracting away these types of arguments.

If a protocol  $\mathcal{P}$  computes a function  $f$  then for every leaf  $\ell$  of  $\mathcal{P}$ , all inputs  $(x, y) \in R_\ell$  must have the same value of  $f$ , the value with which  $\ell$  is labeled.

**Definition 1.15:** A subset  $R \subseteq X \times Y$  is called  $f$ -monochromatic (in short, monochromatic) if  $f$  is fixed on  $R$ .

Figure 1.3 shows an example of a monochromatic rectangle, where the rows correspond to  $X = \{0, 1\}^3$ , the columns correspond to  $Y = \{0, 1\}^3$ , and the rectangle  $R = A \times B$  is defined by  $A = \{001, 010, 100, 110\}$  and  $B = \{001, 010, 011, 101, 110\}$ . We emphasize that, although in many figures it will be convenient to draw the rectangles as having adjacent rows and columns, the definition does *not* require this.

This section can now be summarized by:

**Lemma 1.16:** Any protocol  $\mathcal{P}$  for a function  $f$  induces a partition of  $X \times Y$  into  $f$ -monochromatic rectangles. The number of rectangles is the number of leaves of  $\mathcal{P}$ .

Figure 1.4 shows the partition of the space of inputs  $X \times Y$  by the protocol of Figure 1.1 (for the function  $f$  given in Figure 1.2).

**Corollary 1.17:** If any partition of  $X \times Y$  into  $f$ -monochromatic rectangles requires at least  $t$  rectangles, then  $D(f) \geq \log_2 t$ .

**PROOF:** By Lemma 1.16, the leaves of any protocol for  $f$  induce a partition of  $X \times Y$  into  $f$ -monochromatic rectangles. Hence, by the assumption, any such protocol must

|        | $y$ | $y'$ | $y''$ | $y'''$ |
|--------|-----|------|-------|--------|
| $x$    | 0   | 0    | 0     | 1      |
| $x'$   | 0   | 0    | 0     | 1      |
| $x''$  | 0   | 0    | 0     | 0      |
| $x'''$ | 0   | 1    | 1     | 1      |

Figure 1.4: The function  $f$  computed by the protocol of Figure 1.1

have at least  $t$  leaves and thus the depth of its tree (since the tree is binary) is at least  $\log_2 t$ .  $\square$

This corollary gives a strategy for proving lower bounds on the communication complexity of a function  $f$ : prove lower bounds on the number of rectangles in any partition of  $X \times Y$  into  $f$ -monochromatic rectangles. In the next sections we present several techniques for doing this.

**Exercise 1.18:** Let  $X = Y = \{1, \dots, n\}$ . A geometric rectangle is a set of the form  $\{(x, y) \mid x_{\min} \leq x \leq x_{\max}, y_{\min} \leq y \leq y_{\max}\}$ , for some values  $x_{\min}, x_{\max}, y_{\min}$ , and  $y_{\max}$  in  $\{1, \dots, n\}$ . A *comparison protocol* is a one in which at each node  $v$ , if Alice needs to transmit a bit then this bit is the result of comparing her input  $x$  with some value  $\theta_v$  (that is,  $a_v(x)$  is 0 if  $x < \theta_v$  and 1 if  $x \geq \theta_v$ ). Similarly, at each node  $v$  where Bob speaks he sends the result of comparing his input  $y$  with some value  $\theta_v$ . Prove that every comparison protocol for computing a function  $f$  partitions the space  $X \times Y$  into  $f$ -monochromatic geometric rectangles.

### 1.3. Fooling Sets and Rectangle Size

Our first lower bound technique is called the “fooling set” technique. It says that if we exhibit a large set of input pairs such that no two of them can be in a single monochromatic rectangle, this implies that the number of monochromatic rectangles is large. The idea is to use the fact that each protocol partitions the space  $X \times Y$  into monochromatic rectangles (Lemma 1.16), together with the property of rectangles given by Proposition 1.13 (see Figure 1.5). These together imply that if two input pairs  $(x_1, y_1)$  and  $(x_2, y_2)$  are in the same monochromatic rectangle induced by a given protocol  $\mathcal{P}$ , then the value of  $f$  on both of them is some  $z$ , and that the two input pairs  $(x_1, y_2)$

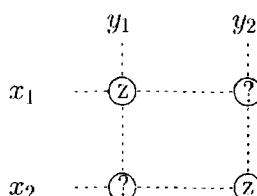


Figure 1.5: The rectangle’s property

and  $(x_2, y_1)$  must also be in the same monochromatic rectangle. In particular,  $f$  has the same value  $z$  on both of  $(x_1, y_2)$  and  $(x_2, y_1)$ . In other words, if the value of  $f$  on either  $(x_1, y_2)$  or  $(x_2, y_1)$  is not  $z$ , then  $(x_1, y_1)$  and  $(x_2, y_2)$  cannot be in the same rectangle. This is formalized by the following definition and lemma.

**Definition 1.19:** Let  $f : X \times Y \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$ . A set  $S \subset X \times Y$  is called a fooling set (for  $f$ ) if there exists a value  $z \in \{0, 1\}$  such that

- For every  $(x, y) \in S$ ,  $f(x, y) = z$ .
- For every two distinct pairs  $(x_1, y_1)$  and  $(x_2, y_2)$  in  $S$ , either  $f(x_1, y_2) \neq z$  or  $f(x_2, y_1) \neq z$ .

**Lemma 1.20:** If  $f$  has a fooling set  $S$  of size  $t$ , then  $D(f) \geq \log_2 t$ .

PROOF: It is enough to prove that no monochromatic rectangle contains more than one element of  $S$ . Assume that a rectangle  $R$  contains two distinct pairs  $(x_1, y_1)$  and  $(x_2, y_2)$  that belong to  $S$ . By Proposition 1.13, it must also contain  $(x_1, y_2)$  and  $(x_2, y_1)$ . However, since  $S$  is a fooling set, the value of  $f$  on both  $(x_1, y_1)$  and  $(x_2, y_2)$  is  $z$ , whereas on at least one of  $(x_1, y_2)$  and  $(x_2, y_1)$  the value of  $f$  is different than  $z$ . It follows that  $R$  is not monochromatic. Therefore, at least  $t$  rectangles are needed to cover  $S$ , and the lemma follows by Corollary 1.17.  $\square$

The above bound is obtained by considering a fooling set that contains only points of  $X \times Y$  whose  $f$ -value is some  $z \in \{0, 1\}$ . In fact, we get a lower bound on the number of  $z$ -rectangles. To improve the lower bound, we can obtain such a bound for both the 0-rectangles and the 1-rectangles. The total number of rectangles needed in a partition is at least the sum of these two numbers. Despite the simplicity of the fooling set technique, it gives tight bounds for several interesting functions.

► **Example 1.21:** Alice and Bob each hold an  $n$ -bit string,  $x, y \in \{0, 1\}^n$ . The equality function,  $\text{EQ}(x, y)$ , is defined to be 1 if  $x = y$  and 0 otherwise. A fooling set of size  $2^n$  is

$$S = \{(\alpha, \alpha) \mid \alpha \in \{0, 1\}^n\}$$

(because for every  $\alpha$ ,  $\text{EQ}(\alpha, \alpha) = 1$ , whereas for every  $\alpha \neq \beta$ ,  $\text{EQ}(\alpha, \beta) = 0$ ). It follows that  $D(\text{EQ}) \geq n$ . By also counting 0-rectangles, we conclude  $D(\text{EQ}) \geq n + 1$ . Finally, recall that  $D(f) \leq n + 1$  for every function  $f : \{0, 1\}^n \times \{0, 1\}^n \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$  (by Proposition 1.3). Therefore,  $D(\text{EQ}) = n + 1$ .

**Exercise 1.22:** Alice and Bob each hold an  $n$ -bit integer  $0 \leq x, y < 2^n$ . The “greater than” function,  $\text{GT}(x, y)$ , is defined to be 1 iff  $x > y$ . Prove that  $D(\text{GT}) = n + 1$ .

► **Example 1.23:** Alice and Bob each hold a subset of  $\{1, \dots, n\}$  ( $x$  and  $y$ , respectively). The disjointness function,  $\text{DISJ}(x, y)$ , is defined to be 1 iff  $x \cap y = \emptyset$ . A fooling set of size  $2^n$  is given by

$$S = \{(A, \bar{A}) \mid A \subseteq \{1, \dots, n\}\}$$

(without loss of generality, for  $A \neq B$  there exists an element  $a$  such that  $a \in A, a \notin B$ ; hence  $A \cap B \neq \emptyset$ ). It follows that  $D(\text{DISJ}) \geq n$ . Once again, by also counting 0-rectangles we conclude  $D(\text{DISJ}) = n + 1$ .

The fooling set technique is a special case of a more general technique for proving lower bounds on the communication complexity. The idea is to prove that the “size” of every monochromatic rectangle is small, implying that many monochromatic rectangles are needed in any partition of  $X \times Y$ . Naturally, the “size” measure can be chosen to our advantage, and in general we can use any probability distribution as a size measure.

**Proposition 1.24:** *Let  $\mu$  be a probability distribution of  $X \times Y$ . If any  $f$ -monochromatic rectangle  $R$  has measure  $\mu(R) \leq \delta$ , then  $D(f) \geq \log_2 1/\delta$ .*

PROOF: Since  $\mu(X \times Y) = 1$ , there must be at least  $1/\delta$  rectangles in any  $f$ -monochromatic partition of  $X \times Y$ . Thus, the bound follows from Corollary 1.17.  $\square$

To see that the fooling set technique is indeed a special case of Proposition 1.24, we consider any fooling set  $S$  of size  $t$  and define a probability distribution  $\mu$  as follows:  $\mu(x, y) = 0$  for  $(x, y) \notin S$  and  $\mu(x, y) = 1/t$  for  $(x, y) \in S$ . What we have shown in the proof of Lemma 1.20 is that every monochromatic rectangle  $R$  can contain at most one element of the fooling set and thus has measure  $\mu(R) \leq 1/t$ . Another special case is obtained by looking at the actual size of the  $f$ -monochromatic rectangles. If we can prove that all monochromatic rectangles are of size smaller than  $k$ , then the number of rectangles is at least  $|X||Y|/k$  and hence  $D(f) \geq \log |X| + \log |Y| - \log k$ . To see that this is also a special case of Proposition 1.24, consider the uniform distribution  $\mu(x, y) = 1/|X||Y|$ . The above property guarantees that every monochromatic rectangle  $R$  has measure  $\mu(R) \leq k/|X||Y|$ . A slight variant of this argument can be obtained by considering only the inputs for which  $f(x, y) = 0$ . This is done in Example 1.25.

► **Example 1.25:** Alice and Bob each hold an  $n$ -bit string,  $x, y \in \{0, 1\}^n$ . The inner-product function,  $\text{IP}$ , is defined by  $\text{IP}(x, y) = \sum_{i=1}^n x_i y_i \pmod{2}$ . That is,  $\text{IP}(x, y)$  is just the inner product  $\langle x, y \rangle$  modulo 2. We will show that any 0-monochromatic rectangle covers at most  $2^n$  of the input pairs (out of about  $2^{2n}/2$  0s). Thus, if  $\mu$  is the uniform distribution on the 0s of the function then, for all rectangles  $R$ ,  $\mu(R) \leq 2^{-(n-1)}$ . This implies, by Proposition 1.24, that  $D(\text{IP}) \geq n - 1$ .

Let  $R = A \times B$  be any 0-rectangle. First, we replace  $A$  by  $A' = \text{span}(A)$  and  $B$  by  $B' = \text{span}(B)$ , where  $\text{span}(C)$  denotes the linear span, over the vector space  $Z_2^n$ , of vectors in the set  $C$ . The extended rectangle  $A' \times B'$  may have larger area but since the inner product satisfies

$$\langle a + a', b + b' \rangle = \langle a, b \rangle + \langle a, b' \rangle + \langle a', b \rangle + \langle a', b' \rangle$$

then  $A' \times B'$  is still 0-monochromatic. Finally, since  $A'$  and  $B'$  are orthogonal subspaces

of  $Z_2^n$ , then by linear algebra the sum of  $\dim(A')$  and  $\dim(B')$  is at most  $n$ , the dimension of the whole space. Therefore, the size of the rectangle is bounded by  $|A'||B'| = 2^{\dim(A')}2^{\dim(B')} \leq 2^n$ .

**Exercise 1.26:** Prove that the size of any 1-monochromatic rectangle of the `DISJ` function (Example 1.23) is at most  $2^n$ . Conclude that  $D(\text{DISJ}) = \Omega(n)$ .

## 1.4. Rank Lower Bound

In this section we present a very different lower bound technique. This technique also gives a lower bound on communication complexity by giving a lower bound on the number of monochromatic rectangles in any partition of  $X \times Y$ , but it does so in an *algebraic* way. This allows us later to use algebraic tools for proving communication complexity lower bounds. To this end, we associate with every function  $f : X \times Y \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$  a matrix  $M_f$  of dimensions  $|X| \times |Y|$ . The rows of  $M_f$  are indexed by the elements of  $X$  and the columns by the elements of  $Y$ . The  $(x, y)$  entry of  $M_f$  is simply defined as  $f(x, y)$ . For example, Figure 1.6 shows the matrix  $M_{\text{EQ}}$  corresponding to the equality function `EQ` (Example 1.21). This matrix is simply the identity matrix. The following algebraic property of the matrix  $M_f$  is useful for proving lower bounds on the communication complexity of  $f$ .

**Definition 1.27:** *rank( $f$ ) is the linear rank of the matrix  $M_f$  over the field of reals.*

**Lemma 1.28:** *For any function  $f : X \times Y \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$ ,*

$$D(f) \geq \log_2 \text{rank}(f).$$

PROOF: Let  $\mathcal{P}$  be a protocol for  $f$  and let  $L_1$  be the set of leaves of  $\mathcal{P}$  in which the output is 1. For each leaf  $\ell \in L_1$ , define a matrix  $M_\ell$  by  $M_\ell(x, y) = 1$  for  $(x, y) \in R_\ell$  and  $M_\ell(x, y) = 0$  for  $(x, y) \notin R_\ell$ , where  $R_\ell$  is the rectangle of all inputs reaching the

|     | 000 | 001 | 010 | 011 | 100 | 101 | 110 | 111 |
|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|
| 000 | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   |
| 001 | 0   | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   |
| 010 | 0   | 0   | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   |
| 011 | 0   | 0   | 0   | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   |
| 100 | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   |
| 101 | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 1   | 0   | 0   |
| 110 | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 1   | 0   |
| 111 | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 1   |

Figure 1.6: The matrix  $M_{\text{EQ}}$

leaf  $\ell$ . With this notation, observe that every  $(x, y)$  for which  $f(x, y) = 0$  is 0 in all the matrices  $M_\ell$ , whereas every  $(x, y)$  for which  $f(x, y) = 1$  is 1 in a single such matrix. In other words,

$$M_f = \sum_{\ell \in L_1} M_\ell.$$

By the properties of the rank, we have

$$\text{rank}(M_f) \leq \sum_{\ell \in L_1} \text{rank}(M_\ell).$$

Finally,  $\text{rank}(M_\ell) = 1$  so  $\text{rank}(M_f) \leq |L_1| \leq |L|$ . In particular,  $\mathcal{P}$  must have at least  $\text{rank}(f)$  leaves and the lemma follows by Corollary 1.17.  $\square$

Note that the above proof actually gives a lower bound on the number of 1-rectangles. By switching the role of 1 and 0 (that is, looking at the function  $\text{not}(f)$ ), we also get a lower bound on the number of 0-rectangles in any partition. Also, observe that the ranks of the matrices  $M_f$  and  $M_{\text{not}(f)}$  differ by at most 1, since  $M_{\text{not}(f)} = J - M_f$ , where  $J$  is the all-1 matrix (whose rank is 1). Therefore, Lemma 1.28 implies that

$$D(f) \geq \log_2(2\text{rank}(f) - 1).$$

► **Example 1.29:** As noted, the matrix  $M_{\text{EQ}}$  corresponding to the function  $\text{EQ}$  is simply the identity matrix, for which  $\text{rank}(M_{\text{EQ}}) = 2^n$  and hence  $D(\text{EQ}) \geq n$ . Next, consider the inner product function  $\text{IP}$  (as in Example 1.25). The rank of  $M_{\text{IP}}$  seems at first difficult to analyze. Luckily, the matrix  $N = (M_{\text{IP}})^2$  has a simple form: the  $(y, y')$  entry of  $N$  is simply  $\sum_{z \in \{0,1\}^n} \langle y, z \rangle \cdot \langle z, y' \rangle$ , which is exactly the number of  $z$ s for which  $\langle y, z \rangle = \langle z, y' \rangle = 1$ . By the properties of the inner product,  $N$  is a diagonal matrix with the value  $2^{n-1}$  on the diagonal and the value  $2^{n-2}$  off the diagonal (except for the first row and first column, which are identically 0). Thus,  $N$  has almost full  $(2^n - 1)$  rank and so is  $M_{\text{IP}}$  (this is because for two matrices  $A$  and  $B$ ,  $\text{rank}(AB) \leq \min(\text{rank}(A), \text{rank}(B))$ ). It follows that  $D(\text{IP}) \geq n$ .

**Exercise 1.30:** In the previous section, we proved (using the fooling set technique) that the communication complexity of each of the functions  $\text{EQ}$ ,  $\text{GT}$ , and  $\text{DISJ}$  is  $n + 1$ . Prove these facts using a rank argument.

**Exercise 1.31:** Let  $f: X \times Y \rightarrow \{0,1\}$  be a Boolean function.

- Prove that if  $f$  is such that all the rows of  $M_f$  are distinct, then  $D(f) \geq \log \log |X|$ .
- Prove that  $D(f) \leq \text{rank}(f) + 1$ .

## 1.5. Bibliographic Notes

The first motivation for studying communication complexity was the  $AT^2$  lower bound for VLSI of [Thompson 1979] (see Section 8.3). The two-party communication complexity model, as presented here, was first defined and discussed in the seminal paper

[Yao 1979]. Yao identified central notions such as *rectangles* and *covers* as well as several of the examples used commonly in the study of communication complexity (for example, EQ, GT, and DISJ). Example 1.6 and Exercise 1.7 are due to M. Karchmer (private communication). A different  $O(\log^2 n)$  solution to the median problem of Example 1.6 can be derived from [Rodeh 1982]. Exercise 1.8 appears in [Yannakakis 1988]. The notion of *Fooling set* is implicit in [Yao 1979] and appears in the work of [Lipton and Sedgewick 1981]. The terminology we use follows that in [Karp 1986]. The *rank lower bound* was discovered by [Mehlhorn and Schmidt 1982].

Further results related to these notions appear in Chapter 2. See the bibliographic notes in that chapter for additional references. We also refer the reader to the surveys of [Lovász 1989] and [Lengauer 1990].

## Cambridge Books Online

<http://ebooks.cambridge.org/>



Communication Complexity

Eyal Kushilevitz, Noam Nisan

Book DOI: <http://dx.doi.org/10.1017/CBO9780511574948>

Online ISBN: 9780511574948

Hardback ISBN: 9780521560672

Paperback ISBN: 9780521029834

## Chapter

2 - More on Covers pp. 16-27

Chapter DOI: <http://dx.doi.org/10.1017/CBO9780511574948.003>

Cambridge University Press

## CHAPTER 2

# More on Covers

---

In Chapter 1 we saw that every communication protocol induces a partition of the space of possible inputs into monochromatic rectangles and learned of two lower bound techniques for the number of rectangles in such a partition. In this section we study how closely these combinatorial measures relate to communication complexity and to each other.

### 2.1. Covers and Nondeterminism

Although every protocol induces a partition of  $X \times Y$  into  $f$ -monochromatic rectangles, simple examples show that the opposite is not true. In Figure 2.1, a partition of  $X \times Y$  into monochromatic rectangles is given that do not correspond to any protocol. To see this, consider any protocol  $\mathcal{P}$  for computing the corresponding function  $f$ . Since the function is not constant, there must be a first player who sends a message that is not constant. Suppose that this player is Alice. Since the messages that Alice sends on  $x$ ,  $x'$  and  $x''$  are not all the same, there are two possibilities: (1) her messages on  $x$  and  $x'$  are different. In this case the rectangle  $\{x, x'\} \times \{y\}$  is not a monochromatic rectangle induced by the protocol  $\mathcal{P}$ ; or (2) her messages on  $x'$  and  $x''$  are different. In this case the rectangle  $\{x', x''\} \times \{y''\}$  is not a monochromatic rectangle induced by the protocol  $\mathcal{P}$ . Similarly, if Bob is the first player to send a nonconstant message, then this message is inconsistent with either the rectangle  $\{x\} \times \{y', y''\}$  or with the rectangle  $\{x''\} \times \{y, y'\}$ .

A natural question is therefore: How good are lower bound techniques for communication complexity that use lower bounds on the number of monochromatic rectangles in partitions of the space  $X \times Y$  and ignore the additional restriction that these partitions should correspond to some protocol? All of the techniques presented so far are of this type. On the other hand, we are also interested in relaxing the need to *partition* the space  $X \times Y$  into  $f$ -monochromatic rectangles by allowing *covering* of this space (that is, allowing intersections between rectangles). Coverings are more convenient combinatorial objects than partitions. In addition, there is a natural notion of *nondeterministic*

|       | $y$ | $y'$ | $y''$ |
|-------|-----|------|-------|
| $x$   | 1   | 0    | 0     |
| $x'$  | 1   | 1    | 1     |
| $x''$ | 0   | 0    | 1     |

**Figure 2.1:** A partition that does not correspond to any protocol

|       | $y$ | $y'$ | $y''$ |
|-------|-----|------|-------|
| $x$   | 1   | 1    | 0     |
| $x'$  | 1   | 1    | 1     |
| $x''$ | 0   | 1    | 1     |

**Figure 2.2:** An overlapping cover

protocols that correspond to coverings. Again, simple examples show that sometimes it is easier to cover a space than to partition it. Consider, for example, the function presented in Figure 2.2. In this case, the space  $X \times Y$  can be covered by 4 monochromatic rectangles (the pair  $(x', y')$  belongs to 2 rectangles) and it can be verified that to *partition* the space at least 5 monochromatic rectangles are needed. The fooling set method, for example, actually gives the same lower bounds even if we allow for covering the space (and do not restrict ourselves to partitions). Again, this raises the question of how good can this technique be.

To study these issues, we make the following definitions:

**Definition 2.1:** Let  $f : X \times Y \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$  be a function.

1. The protocol partition number of  $f$ ,  $C^P(f)$ , is the smallest number of leaves in a protocol tree for  $f$ .
2. The partition number of  $f$ ,  $C^D(f)$ , is the smallest number of monochromatic rectangles in a partition (that is, a disjoint cover) of  $X \times Y$ .
3. The cover number of  $f$ ,  $C(f)$ , is the smallest number of monochromatic rectangles needed to cover  $X \times Y$  (possibly with intersections).
4. For  $z \in \{0, 1\}$ ,  $C^z(f)$  is the number of monochromatic rectangles needed to cover (possibly with intersections) the  $z$ -inputs of  $f$ .

The following properties should be obvious:

**Proposition 2.2:** For all  $f : X \times Y \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$ :

1.  $C(f) \leq C^D(f) \leq C^P(f) \leq 2^{D(f)}$ .
2.  $C(f) = C^0(f) + C^1(f)$ .

The measure  $C^z(f)$  has a natural interpretation in terms of the *nondeterministic communication complexity* of  $f$ . Assume that an all powerful prover, who sees  $x$  and  $y$ , is trying to convince Alice and Bob that “ $f(x, y) = z$ .” If  $f(x, y) \neq z$ , then Alice and Bob must be able to detect that the proof is wrong no matter what the prover says, but if indeed  $f(x, y) = z$ , then the prover must be able to convince Alice and Bob. For example, a prover who wishes to convince Alice and Bob that two  $n$ -bit strings  $x$  and  $y$  are different, can do so by providing them with an index  $i$  such that  $x_i \neq y_i$ . Then, Alice and Bob can easily check the correctness of the proof by exchanging these two bits. If  $x \neq y$ , then there is a proof (that is, an index  $i$ ) that would convince Alice and Bob that indeed this is the case, whereas if  $x = y$ , then no such proof exists. We claim that the amount of communication (including the “proof” and the bits exchanged by Alice and Bob in order to verify the “proof”) in the most efficient proof system, denoted by  $N^z(f)$ , is essentially  $\log_2 C^z(f)$ . Why is this so? On one hand, any cover of the  $z$ -inputs gives a proof system where a “proof” is a name of a rectangle  $S \times T$  in the cover in which the input  $(x, y)$  resides; the number of bits required is  $\log_2$  of the number of rectangles. Alice and Bob can convince themselves that “ $f(x, y) = z$ ” if Alice checks (and tells Bob) that  $x \in S$  and Bob checks that  $y \in T$ . On the other hand, consider any proof system using at most  $b$  bits. As in the deterministic case, the set of inputs corresponding to a specific communication in which Alice and Bob are convinced is a  $z$ -monochromatic rectangle. Since for every  $(x, y)$  such that  $f(x, y) = z$  there must be an appropriate proof, the set of rectangles corresponding to all possible communications is a cover of the  $z$ -inputs of  $f$  and there are at most  $2^b$  such rectangles. Since we do not require a single proof for each  $(x, y)$ , the rectangles may indeed overlap each other. This definition can be further extended to allow proving  $f(x, y) = z$  for both the case where  $f(x, y) = 0$  and the case where  $f(x, y) = 1$ . The complexity in this case is denoted by  $N(f)$ .

Nondeterminism need not be defined as a proof system but may also be defined as a two-party protocol in which Alice and Bob are allowed to take nondeterministic steps. The reader is encouraged to formalize in both different ways the notion of nondeterministic communication complexity and transform Definition 2.3 below into a lemma claiming the equivalence of these definitions. Since we will be interested mainly in the combinatorial properties of nondeterministic protocols, the formal definitions of the measures  $C^z(f)$  and  $C(f)$  are enough for our purposes.

**Definition 2.3:** *The nondeterministic communication complexity of a Boolean function  $f$  is  $N^1(f) = \log_2 C^1(f)$ . The co-nondeterministic communication complexity of  $f$  is  $N^0(f) = \log_2 C^0(f)$ . Also,  $N(f) = \log_2 C(f)$ .*

By looking more closely into the two techniques for lower bounds introduced in the previous chapter, we see that the lower bounds actually obtained are:

**Lemma 2.4:** *For  $f : X \times Y \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$ :*

1.  $C^D(f) \geq 2 \operatorname{rank}(f) - 1$ .

2. Let  $\mu$  be a probability distribution on the  $z$ -inputs of  $f$  for some  $z \in \{0, 1\}$ . If every  $z$ -monochromatic rectangle  $R$  has measure  $\mu(R) \leq \delta$ , then  $C^z(f) \geq 1/\delta$ . (In particular, this implies that the fooling set method can be used to prove lower bounds on  $C^z(f)$ .)

The first thing we can settle is the relationship between deterministic and nondeterministic communication complexity.

- **Example 2.5:** We have already seen in Example 1.21 that  $D(\text{EQ}) = n + 1$ . In fact, the same proof also shows that  $N^1(\text{EQ}) = n$ . On the other hand, we can show that  $\log_2 n \leq N^0(\text{EQ}) \leq \log_2 n + 1$ . A proof that  $x \neq y$  is simply an index  $i$  of a bit in which  $x$  and  $y$  differ (i.e.,  $x_i \neq y_i$ ). Such a proof requires  $\log_2 n$  bits to specify the index  $i$  and another bit to specify whether  $x_i = 1$  and  $y_i = 0$ , or  $x_i = 0$  and  $y_i = 1$  (alternatively, this can be viewed as a cover of the 0-inputs using  $2n$  rectangles). This argument supplies an upper bound. The lower bound follows from the following exercise.

**Exercise 2.6:** Prove that for all  $f: X \times Y \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$  and  $z \in \{0, 1\}$ ,  $D(f) \leq C^z(f) + 1$ .

Thus, by the above example and exercise, we see that the gap between deterministic and nondeterministic communication complexity may be exponential but not more than this.

**Exercise 2.7:** Show that both  $N^0(\text{GT})$  and  $N^1(\text{GT})$  are at least  $n$ .

## 2.2. Communication Complexity Versus Protocol Cover

It is possible that a certain protocol induces a small number of rectangles, yet requires the players to exchange a large number of bits (in the worst case). In other words, the protocol tree is deep but has a small number of leaves. The following lemma shows that  $D(f) = \Theta(\log C^P(f))$ . Thus the protocol partition number of a function determines, essentially completely, the communication complexity of the function.

**Lemma 2.8:**  $\log_2 C^P(f) \leq D(f) \leq 2 \log_{3/2} C^P(f)$ .

PROOF: The lower bound on  $D(f)$  is trivial (see Proposition 2.2) so we shall prove the upper bound. The basic idea is that a protocol with a certain number of leaves can be converted into a “balanced” protocol in which the depth is about the logarithm of the number of leaves.

Consider a protocol for  $f$  with  $t$  leaves. It is a simple combinatorial fact that in a binary tree with  $t$  leaves there exists an internal node  $v$ , such that  $t_v$ , the number of leaves in the subtree rooted at  $v$ , satisfies  $t/3 < t_v \leq 2t/3$ . To see this, we start at the root of the tree and keep going to the child  $u$  that has more than  $2t/3$  leaves in its subtree. When we cannot continue anymore then we are at a node  $u$ , which has a son with the desired property. Let  $R_v$  be the rectangle of inputs arriving at  $v$  in the protocol. The new protocol for  $f$  goes as follows:

1. Alice and Bob determine whether  $(x, y) \in R_v$ . This requires two bits of communication.

2. If  $(x, y) \in R_v$ , Alice and Bob recursively solve  $f$  in the rectangle  $R_v$ , for which they have a protocol with  $t_v$  leaves.
3. If  $(x, y) \notin R_v$ , Alice and Bob recursively solve  $f'$  on  $X \times Y$ , where  $f' = f$  outside  $R_v$  and is 0 in  $R_v$ . By taking the original protocol for  $f$  and replacing the subtree rooted at  $v$  by a 0-leaf, we get a protocol for  $f'$  with  $t - t_v + 1$  leaves.

For the correctness, computing  $f'$  in the third step (instead of  $f$ ) makes no difference since the inputs  $(x, y)$  in  $R_v$  never reach this step. By the property of  $v$ , in both cases (whether  $(x, y) \notin R_v$  or not) there is a protocol with at most  $2t/3$  leaves. Therefore, the recurrence relation we get for  $D(t)$ , the depth in this transformation starting with a  $t$ -leaf protocol, is  $D(t) \leq 2 + D(2t/3)$ . Obviously,  $D(1) = 0$ , so solving the recurrence gives  $D(t) \leq 2 \log_{3/2} t$ . By taking  $t = C^P(f)$ , the lemma follows.  $\square$

**Exercise 2.9:** Improve the constant in the above upper bound to  $D(f) \leq 3 \log_2 C^P(f)$ . Hint: find a node  $v$  that splits the tree into three parts, each of them with at most  $t/2$  nodes.

### 2.3. Determinism Versus Nondeterminism

We have already seen that  $D(f) = \Theta(\log C^P(f))$  and, on the other hand, that  $D(f)$  may be exponentially larger than  $\log C^1(f)$ . We still have to figure out the exact relation between  $D(f)$  and the measures  $C^D(f)$  and  $C(f)$ . Proposition 2.2 states that  $D(f) \geq \log C^D(f)$ . It is not known whether this is always tight.

**Open Problem 2.10:** Is  $D(f) = O(\log C^D(f))$ ?

The following theorem implies that if there is a gap between  $D(f)$  and  $O(\log C^D(f))$  it cannot be too large. In fact, even the gap between  $D(f)$  and  $N(f)$  ( $= \log C(f)$ ) is not very large:

**Theorem 2.11:** *For every function  $f : X \times Y \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$ ,*

$$D(f) = O(N^0(f)N^1(f)).$$

We provide two proofs of this central theorem. The first is algorithmic, whereas the second is more combinatorial. Both proofs rely on the following simple property of rectangles: Let  $R = S \times T$  be a 0-monochromatic rectangle and  $R' = S' \times T'$  be a 1-monochromatic rectangle. Then, either  $R$  and  $R'$  do not intersect in rows (that is,  $S \cap S' = \emptyset$ ) or  $R$  and  $R'$  do not intersect in columns (that is,  $T \cap T' = \emptyset$ ). Otherwise, there exist  $x \in S \cap S'$  and  $y \in T \cap T'$  such that the pair  $(x, y)$  belongs to both  $R$  and  $R'$ . However,  $(x, y) \in R$  implies  $f(x, y) = 0$ , whereas  $(x, y) \in R'$  implies  $f(x, y) = 1$  – a contradiction.

**PROOF (ALGORITHMIC VERSION):** We describe a protocol for Alice and Bob. The idea is that Alice and Bob search for a 0-rectangle that contains the input  $(x, y)$ . If they fail, they conclude that  $f(x, y) = 1$ . In each phase of the protocol the players exchange  $\log C^1(f) + O(1)$  bits and they reduce the number of 0-rectangles that are “alive”

(that is, which may include  $(x, y)$ ) by a factor of 2 (initially all 0-rectangles are alive). Hence, there are at most  $\log C^0(f)$  phases. In each phase the players do the following:

1. Alice considers the 0-monochromatic rectangles that are still alive. If there are no such rectangles she outputs  $f(x, y) = 1$ . Otherwise, she looks for a 1-rectangle  $Q$  that contains the row  $x$  and that intersects in rows with at most half of the 0-rectangles that are alive. If she finds such a rectangle  $Q$ , she sends its name to Bob and the phase is completed (the 0-rectangles that remain alive are those that intersect in rows with  $Q$ ). Otherwise, she tells Bob that there is no such rectangle.
2. Bob looks for a 1-rectangle  $Q$  that contains the column  $y$  and that intersects in columns with at most half of the 0-rectangles that are alive. Again, if such a rectangle  $Q$  exists, then Bob sends its name to Alice and the phase is completed (the 0-rectangles that remain alive are those that intersect in columns with  $Q$ ). Otherwise, Bob outputs  $f(x, y) = 0$ .

Each phase reduces the number of 0-rectangles that are alive by a factor of 2, while using  $\log C^1(f) + O(1)$  bits of communication, hence giving the required complexity. For the correctness, if  $(x, y)$  belongs to some 0-rectangle  $R$ , then  $R$  remains alive during the whole protocol. Therefore, if no 0-rectangle is alive, then  $f(x, y) = 1$ . On the other hand, if neither Alice nor Bob finds a 1-rectangle to announce during a phase, this implies  $f(x, y) = 0$ . This is because if  $(x, y)$  is in a 1-rectangle then, by the above property, either this rectangle intersects in rows at most half of the 0-rectangles, or it intersects in columns at most half of the 0-rectangles. Therefore, either Alice or Bob should be able to find a  $Q$  as needed.  $\square$

**PROOF (COMBINATORIAL VERSION):** Let  $L(k, \ell)$  denote the maximum of  $C^P(g)$  over all Boolean functions  $g$  such that  $C^1(g) \leq k$  and  $C^0(g) \leq \ell$ . Consider the optimal cover for  $f$ . Let  $R = S \times T$  be a 0-monochromatic rectangle in this cover. By the above-mentioned property we can assume, without loss of generality, that at least half of the 1-monochromatic rectangles  $R' = S' \times T'$  in the cover do not intersect  $R$  in rows; that is,  $S' \cap S = \emptyset$ . (Otherwise, replace Alice by Bob and  $S$  by  $T$  in the rest of the proof.)

A protocol for  $f$  will proceed as follows: First Alice tells Bob whether  $x \in S$ . If  $x \in S$  then they proceed by recursively solving  $f$  on the domain  $S \times Y$ . On this domain  $f$  has a 1-cover with at most  $k/2$  rectangles (those  $R'$  such that  $S' \cap S \neq \emptyset$ ). If  $x \notin S$  then they recursively solve  $f$  on the domain  $\bar{S} \times Y$ . On this domain  $f$  has a 0-cover with at most  $\ell - 1$  rectangles (the original cover without  $R$ ). We thus get the recurrence  $L(k, \ell) \leq L(k/2, \ell) + L(k, \ell - 1)$ , which implies, by induction on  $k$  and  $\ell$  (together with  $L(k, 0) = L(0, \ell) = 1$ ), that  $L(k, \ell) \leq (\ell + 1)^{\log k}$ . Therefore,  $C^P(f) \leq (C^0(f) + 1)^{\log C^1(f)}$ . The proof follows since  $D(f) = O(\log C^P(f))$  (Lemma 2.8).  $\square$

Obviously, this theorem implies that  $D(f) = O((N(f))^2)$ , which in turn implies  $D(f) = O((\log C^D(f))^2)$ . This theorem also means that, while one of  $N^0(f)$  and  $N^1(f)$  can be exponentially smaller than  $D(f)$ , it cannot be the case that both  $N^0(f)$  and  $N^1(f)$  are much smaller than  $D(f)$ . The following example shows that this theorem is the best possible on the connection between  $D(f)$  and  $N(f)$ .

► **Example 2.12:** Alice and Bob hold inputs  $x$  and  $y$  (respectively), each of which is a subset of  $\{1, \dots, n\}$  of size  $k$  (for some fixed  $0 \leq k \leq n/2$ ). The  $k$ -disjointness function,  $\text{DISJ}_k(x, y)$ , is defined to be 1 iff  $x \cap y = \emptyset$  (obviously, for  $k > n/2$  the function becomes constant). Note that the size of  $X$  (and of  $Y$ ) is  $m = \binom{n}{k}$ . We will analyze both the deterministic and nondeterministic communication complexity of the function  $\text{DISJ}_k$ , proving that there is a large gap between them.

We start by analyzing the nondeterministic communication complexity of the function  $\text{DISJ}_k$ . Clearly,  $N^0(\text{DISJ}_k) \leq \log n$ , because a proof that two sets  $x$  and  $y$  intersect is simply a name of an element in the intersection. We show that  $N^1(\text{DISJ}_k) = O(k + \log \log n)$ , by building an appropriate 1-cover using the probabilistic method. Choose a set  $S \subseteq \{1, \dots, n\}$  at random (each  $i$  is in  $S$  with probability  $1/2$ ). The set

$$R_S = \{x \mid x \subseteq S, |x| = k\} \times \{y \mid y \subseteq \bar{S}, |y| = k\}$$

is obviously a 1-rectangle. For each input  $(x, y)$  such that  $x \cap y = \emptyset$  (and each is of size  $k$ ),  $\Pr_S[(x, y) \in R_S] = 2^{-2k}$ . Thus, if we choose  $t = 2^{2k} \ln(m^2)$  random rectangles, we get a collection of  $t$  rectangles for which the probability that  $(x, y)$  is not covered is  $(1 - \frac{1}{2^{2k}})^t < 1/m^2$ . Since there are less than  $m^2$  such inputs, this implies that the probability that there exists a 1-input that is not covered is less than 1. Alternatively, with a positive probability such a random cover covers every 1-input. Hence, a cover of size  $t$  exists and  $N^1(\text{DISJ}_k) = O(\log t) = O(k + \log \log n)$ .

Now we analyze the deterministic communication complexity of  $\text{DISJ}_k$ . We use the rank lower bound to prove that  $D(\text{DISJ}_k) \geq \log_2 m$ . For this, consider the matrix  $D_k^n$  associated with the function. Denote by  $\vec{x}$  the row of the matrix corresponding to the set  $x$ . We prove, by induction on  $n$  and  $k$ , that  $D_k^n$  has full rank. It is true in the base cases  $D_0^n$  (this is a  $1 \times 1$  matrix whose single entry is 1) and  $D_k^{2k}$  (each set is disjoint only to its complement so this is a diagonal matrix). For the induction step, let  $X_1$  be the set of rows  $\vec{x}$  of  $D_k^n$  for which the corresponding set  $x$  does not contain the element  $n$ , and let  $X_2$  be the set of rows that contain  $n$ . Similarly,  $Y_1$  and  $Y_2$  are the columns whose sets contain or do not contain (respectively) the element  $n$ . Note that  $X_1 \times Y_1$  is simply  $D_{k-1}^{n-1}$  and that  $X_2 \times Y_2$  is the 0 matrix. We apply a linear transformation on  $D_k^n$  (which can only decrease the rank). This transformation changes only the rows of  $X_2$  so as to get in  $X_2 \times Y_1$  the 0-matrix and in  $X_2 \times Y_2$  the matrix  $D_{k-1}^{n-1}$  (see Figure 2.3). By induction hypothesis, both  $D_k^{n-1}$  and  $D_{k-1}^{n-1}$  have full rank, so the matrix  $D_k^n$  also has full rank.

It remains to describe the linear transformation. Consider any set  $x \in X_2$ . It can be written as  $x = x' \cup \{n\}$ , where  $x'$  is a set of size  $k-1$ . We replace the row  $\vec{x}$  by a row  $\hat{x}$  as follows:

$$\hat{x} = \frac{1}{n-2k+1} \cdot \vec{v}_x - \frac{n-2k}{n-2k+1} \cdot \vec{x} \quad \text{where } \vec{v}_x = \sum_{z: x' \subseteq z, |z|=k} \vec{z}.$$

We first need to show that for all  $y \in Y_1$ ,  $\hat{x}[y] = 0$  (that is, the  $y$ -th entry of  $\hat{x}$  contains 0). There are two cases:

- If  $\vec{x}[y] = 0$ , this means that  $x$  intersects  $y$ . Since  $y$  does not contain  $n$ , then  $x'$  already intersects  $y$ , and hence each set  $z$  containing it intersects  $y$ . That is, for each such  $z$ ,  $\vec{z}[y] = 0$  and therefore  $\vec{v}_x[y] = 0$ . In this case  $\hat{x}[y] = 0 - 0 = 0$ .

|       | $Y_1$       | $Y_2$ |
|-------|-------------|-------|
| $X_1$ | $D_k^{n-1}$ | ?     |
| $X_2$ | ?           | 0     |

|       | $Y_1$       | $Y_2$           |
|-------|-------------|-----------------|
| $X_1$ | $D_k^{n-1}$ | ?               |
| $X_2$ | 0           | $D_{k-1}^{n-1}$ |

**Figure 2.3:** The matrix  $D_k^n$  before the linear transformation (left) and after the linear transformation (right)

- If  $\vec{x}[y] = 1$ , this means that  $y$  and  $x$  (and certainly  $x'$ ) are disjoint. The sets  $z$  (of size  $k$ ) that contain  $x'$  and are disjoint from  $y$  are exactly those whose  $k$ -th element was not chosen from  $x \cup y$ . There are  $n - 2k$  such sets and hence  $\vec{v}_x[y] = n - 2k$ . In this case  $\hat{x}[y] = \frac{n-2k}{n-2k+1} - \frac{n-2k}{n-2k+1} = 0$ .

Next, consider  $y \in Y_2$ . Such  $y$  can be written as  $y = y' \cup \{n\}$ . We will show that  $\hat{x}[y] = \text{DISJ}_{k-1}(x', y')$  (as noted, in this case,  $\vec{x}[y] = 0$ ). Again, there are two cases:

- If  $x'$  and  $y'$  intersect then so do  $z$  and  $y'$ , for all  $z$  containing  $x'$ . Hence  $\vec{v}_x[y] = 0$ . So  $\hat{x}[y] = 0 - 0 = 0$ .
- If  $x'$  and  $y'$  are disjoint then the number of  $z$ s containing  $x'$  and disjoint from  $y'$  (certainly those that are disjoint from  $y$  and  $y'$  are the same since we consider only  $z$ s that do not contain  $n$ ) is exactly  $n - 2k + 1$  (since this time  $x \cup y$  contains only  $2k - 1$  elements). In this case  $\hat{x}[y] = \frac{n-2k+1}{n-2k+1} - 0 = 1$ .

Let  $k = \log_2 n$ . The above lower bound (together with the trivial upper bound in which Alice sends  $x$  to Bob using  $\log m$  bits) shows that  $D(\text{DISJ}_k) = \theta(\log^2 n)$ . We also showed that  $N(\text{DISJ}_k) = O(\log n)$  (Theorem 2.11 shows that in fact  $N(\text{DISJ}_k) = \theta(\log n)$ ). To conclude, this example shows that for certain functions the gap between the deterministic communication complexity and the nondeterministic communication complexity may be quadratic.

Another example exhibiting this gap appears in Example 4.5.

**Exercise 2.13:** Recall the definition of geometric rectangles given in Exercise 1.18. Let  $f$  be any function for which  $X \times Y$  can be covered by  $t$   $f$ -monochromatic geometric rectangles (possibly with overlaps). Prove that  $D(f) = O(\log t)$ .

## 2.4. Rectangle Size and Covers

We have seen two lower bound techniques so far: the *rectangle size technique* in which we try to give an upper bound on the “size” of any monochromatic rectangle, and the

*rank technique* in which we try to give a lower bound on the rank of the associated matrix. In this section we study the tightness of the rectangle size technique, whereas in Section 2.5 we deal with the tightness of the rank technique. Recall that to use the rectangle size technique we define some probability distribution  $\mu$  on, say, the 1-inputs of  $f$ . We then look at  $\max \mu(R)$ , where  $R$  ranges over all 1-monochromatic rectangles, and conclude (by Lemma 2.4) that  $C^1(f) \geq 1/\max \mu(R)$ .

**Definition 2.14:** Let  $\mu$  be a probability distribution on the 1s of  $f$ . The  $\mu$ -rectangle size bound of  $f$ ,  $B_\mu(f)$ , is  $B_\mu(f) = 1/\max_R \mu(R)$ , where  $R$  ranges over all 1-monochromatic rectangles. The rectangle size bound of  $f$ ,  $B_*^1(f)$ , is the maximum bound achievable this way, that is  $B_*^1(f) = \max_\mu B_\mu(f)$ , where  $\mu$  ranges over all probability distributions over the 1s of  $f$ .

Since (the second part of) Lemma 2.4 holds for every probability distribution  $\mu$ , it immediately follows that  $B_*^1(f)$  gives a lower bound on the nondeterministic communication complexity of  $f$ .

**Proposition 2.15:**  $C^1(f) \geq B_*^1(f)$ , and thus  $N^1(f) \geq \log_2 B_*^1(f)$ .

It turns out that this bound is nearly tight.

**Theorem 2.16:** For any function  $f : \{0, 1\}^n \times \{0, 1\}^n \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$ ,  $C^1(f) \leq \ln(2) 2n B_*^1(f)$ , and thus  $N^1(f) \leq \log_2 B_*^1(f) + \log_2 n + O(1)$ .

PROOF: We adaptively build a cover for the 1s of  $f$ , by adding in the  $i$ -th step a 1-monochromatic rectangle  $R_i$  to the cover. Let  $\mu_i$  be the uniform distribution on the 1s of  $f$  that were not covered during the first  $i - 1$  steps. Let  $R_i$  be the largest 1-monochromatic rectangle according to this distribution; that is,  $R_i$  is a rectangle of size  $\max \mu_i(R) = 1/B_{\mu_i}(f) \geq 1/B_*^1(f)$ . Add  $R_i$  to the cover and continue (unless all the 1s of  $f$  are already covered).

Let us see how large this cover is. Let  $n_i$  be the number of 1s not covered after the first  $i$  rectangles have been chosen. By the choice of  $R_i$ ,  $n_{i+1}/n_i \leq 1 - 1/B_*^1(f)$ . This is because during the  $i$ -th step we choose the largest rectangle according to a distribution  $\mu_i$  that is *uniform* on  $n_i$  entries and the size of this rectangle was at least  $1/B_*^1(f)$  of these  $n_i$  entries. Since  $n_0 \leq 2^{2n}$  we have  $n_i \leq 2^{2n}(1 - 1/B_*^1(f))^i$ . Thus for  $i > \ln(2^{2n})B_*^1(f)$ , we have  $n_i < 1$ , and thus all the 1s of  $f$  must be covered by then. Therefore,  $C^1(f) \leq \ln(2) 2n B_*^1(f)$ .  $\square$

This bound is essentially tight:

- **Example 2.17:** Let  $\text{NE}(x, y) = \text{not}(\text{EQ}(x, y))$ . That is, the nonequality function,  $\text{NE}$ , is 1 iff the two strings  $x$  and  $y$  are *not equal*. We have already seen in Example 2.5 that  $N^1(\text{NE}) = \log_2 n + 1$  (in the terminology of covers  $C^1(\text{NE}) = 2n$ , which is obtained by defining for each index  $i$  and a bit  $b$  a rectangle  $R_{i,b}$  of all pairs  $(x, y)$  in which  $x_i$  equals  $b$  and  $y_i$  equals the complement of  $b$ ). On the other hand, we claim that  $B_*^1(\text{NE}) \leq 4$ .

To see this, let  $\mu$  be any distribution on the 1s of NE. We will show that there exists a rectangle  $R$  such that  $\mu(R) \geq 1/4$ . Hence  $B_\mu(\text{NE}) \leq 4$  and because this holds for *all* distributions, then  $B_*^1(f) \leq 4$ . Consider a monochromatic rectangle chosen at random as follows: choose a random  $n$ -bit string  $r$ , and a random bit  $b$ . Let

$$R_{r,b} = \{x \mid \langle x, r \rangle = b\} \times \{y \mid \langle y, r \rangle \neq b\}.$$

Clearly,  $R_{r,b}$  is a 1-monochromatic rectangle. By the properties of the inner product, for any fixed  $(x, y)$  such that  $x \neq y$ ,  $\Pr_{r,b}[(x, y) \in R_{r,b}] = 1/4$ . Now consider  $E_{r,b}[\mu(R_{r,b})]$ . If we show that this expectation is at least  $1/4$ , then there exists a rectangle  $R_{r,b}$  for which  $\mu(R_{r,b}) \geq 1/4$ , as desired. Denote by  $Z_{r,b}(x, y)$  a random variable that gets the value  $\mu(x, y)$  if  $(x, y) \in R_{r,b}$  and 0 otherwise. We can write  $E_{r,b}[\mu(R_{r,b})] = E_{r,b}[\sum_{x \neq y} Z_{r,b}(x, y)]$ , which by linearity of the expectation equals  $\sum_{x \neq y} E_{r,b}[Z_{r,b}(x, y)]$ . By the above,  $E_{r,b}[Z_{r,b}(x, y)] = \frac{1}{4}\mu(x, y)$ . Hence,

$$E_{r,b}[\mu(R_{r,b})] = \sum_{x \neq y} \frac{1}{4}\mu(x, y) = \frac{1}{4} \sum_{x \neq y} \mu(x, y) = 1/4.$$

We may also ask whether the *fooling set* method (which is a special case of the rectangle size method) always suffices. The answer is no:

**Exercise 2.18\***: Show that most functions  $f: \{0,1\}^n \times \{0,1\}^n \rightarrow \{0,1\}$  satisfy  $N^1(f) = \Omega(n)$ , and yet the size of the largest fooling set for  $f$  is  $O(n)$ . (An explicit example of a function with these properties is given in Example 4.16.)

## 2.5. On Rank and Covers

We now turn our attention to the rank lower bound which states that  $D(f) \geq \log \text{rank}(f)$  (in fact, in Lemma 2.4 we have already observed that the rank lower bound actually gives a lower bound on the partition number,  $C^D(f)$ ). The best upper bound known is  $D(f) \leq \text{rank}(f) + 1$  (Exercise 1.31). The gap between these two bounds is huge. The following example shows that, for certain functions  $f$ , the deterministic communication complexity can be significantly larger than  $\log \text{rank}(f)$ .

► **Example 2.19:** Let  $h_1$  be the following polynomial in 3 Boolean variables

$$h_1(z_1, z_2, z_3) = z_1 + z_2 + z_3 - z_1z_2 - z_1z_3 - z_2z_3.$$

This polynomial is a (symmetric) Boolean function that gives 1 iff one or two of its input are 1s. We now recursively define a function  $h_k$  on  $3^k$  variables by

$$\begin{aligned} h_k(z_1, \dots, z_{3^k}) \\ = h_1(h_{k-1}(z_1, \dots, z_{3^{k-1}}), h_{k-1}(z_{3^{k-1}+1}, \dots, z_{2 \cdot 3^{k-1}}), h_{k-1}(z_{2 \cdot 3^{k-1}+1}, \dots, z_{3^k})). \end{aligned}$$

The following properties of  $h_k$  are easily proved by induction on  $k$ : (1) The number of terms in this polynomial is bounded by  $6^{2^k-1}$ . (2)  $h_k$  is a Boolean function (on Boolean  $z_i$ s); moreover, if all the  $3^k$  input variables are 0, then  $h_k$  gives the value 0 and if exactly one

input variable is 1, then  $h_k$  gives the value 1. We now use these polynomials to construct the desired Boolean function  $f$ . Assume that  $n = 3^k$  for some  $k$ . For  $x, y \in \{0, 1\}^n$  we define  $f(x, y) = h_k(x_1y_1, \dots, x_ny_n)$ .

To prove that  $D(f) = \Omega(n)$ , consider the disjointness function **DISJ**. We have already showed that the communication complexity of this function (that is, of deciding whether two sets  $x$  and  $y$  are disjoint or not) is  $\Omega(n)$ . In Section 4.6 we will prove a much stronger property: *any* function  $g$  such that  $g(x, y) = 0$  when  $x \cap y = \emptyset$  and  $g(x, y) = 1$  when  $|x \cap y| = 1$  satisfies  $D(g) = \Omega(n)$ . By property (2),  $f$  is such a function (transform the sets  $x$  and  $y$  into their characteristic vectors and observe that intersection occurs iff  $x_i y_i = 1$ ) and hence  $D(f) = \Omega(n)$ . On the other hand, let

$$h_k(z_1, \dots, z_n) = a_1 T_1 + a_2 T_2 + \dots + a_s T_s$$

be the representation of  $h_k$  as a polynomial of  $s$  terms. For a term  $T_i$ , let  $R_i$  be the set of all inputs  $(x, y)$  that satisfy the term  $T_i$  (that is, if  $T_i = z_{i_1}z_{i_2} \dots z_{i_l}$  then  $R_i$  is the set of all inputs  $(x, y)$  where  $x_{i_1} = y_{i_1} = 1, \dots, x_{i_l} = y_{i_l} = 1$ ). Clearly,  $R_i$  is a rectangle. Let  $M_i$  be a matrix whose  $(x, y)$  entry is  $a_i$  if  $(x, y)$  is in  $R_i$  and 0 otherwise. Then,  $\text{rank}(M_i) = 1$ . Moreover,  $M_f = \sum_{i=1}^s M_i$ , which implies that  $\text{rank}(M_f) \leq \sum_{i=1}^s \text{rank}(M_i) = s$ . By property (1),

$$\log \text{rank}(M_f) \leq \log s = O(2^k) = O(n^{1/\log_2 3}) = O(n^{0.631\dots}).$$

This is significantly smaller than the communication complexity of  $f$ , which is, as shown,  $\Omega(n)$ .

We can state the following open problem.

**Open Problem 2.20:** Does  $D(f) = (\log \text{rank}(f))^{O(1)}$ , for all  $f: X \times Y \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$ ?

Any improvement of either the lower bound for the gap (Example 2.19) or the upper bound (Exercise 1.31) seems interesting. It is known that to give a positive answer it suffices to show that either  $N^0(f)$  or  $N^1(f)$  equals  $(\log \text{rank}(f))^{O(1)}$ :

**Exercise 2.21:** Show that  $D(f) = O(N^0(f)/\log \text{rank}(f))$ . Hint: Look at the proof of Theorem 2.11 (Combinatorial Version). Similarly,  $D(f) = O(N^1(f)/\log \text{rank}(f))$ .

In fact, to give a positive answer to the above open problem, it suffices to show that every low rank matrix has a large monochromatic rectangle:

**Exercise 2.22:** Let  $\text{Mono}(f)$  denote the fraction of  $M_f$ 's entries covered by the largest monochromatic rectangle of  $f$ . Show that if for every function  $f$ ,  $\log(1/\text{Mono}(f)) = (\log \text{rank}(f))^{O(1)}$  then Open Problem 2.20 gets a positive answer. Hint: Look at the proof of Theorem 2.11 (Combinatorial Version).

The next exercise shows that several possible extensions of Open Problem 2.20 are false:

**Exercise 2.23:**

- Let  $\text{INTER} : \{0, 1\}^n \times \{0, 1\}^n \rightarrow \{0, 1, \dots, n\}$  be the function that counts the number entries in which  $x_i = y_i = 1$  (think of  $x$  and  $y$  as sets, then  $\text{INTER}(x, y)$  is the size of their intersection). Show that the rank of  $M_{\text{INTER}}$  is  $n$ . Conclude that for nonboolean functions the gap between  $D(f)$  and  $\log \text{rank}(f)$  may be exponential.
- Show that the rank of  $M_p$  over  $GF(2)$  is  $n$ . Conclude that if we consider rank over finite fields (instead of the reals) the gap between  $D(f)$  and  $\log \text{rank}(f)$  may be exponential.

Hint: In both cases present the matrix as a product of two matrices.

## 2.6. Bibliographic Notes

Nondeterministic communication complexity was defined by [Lipton and Sedgewick 1981]. The two types of definitions of nondeterministic protocols, as a proof system and as a protocol in which the players may take nondeterministic steps, correspond to the two possible definitions of the class  $NP$  in computational complexity. Nondeterministic communication complexity was extensively studied by [Aho et al. 1983]. In particular they proved a weaker version of Theorem 2.11. This theorem was later strengthened to its current form by [Halstenberg and Reischuk 1988a]. The tightness of the theorem was proved by [Fürer 1987] (see also [Mehlhorn and Schmidt 1982, Itai 1991]), using the function that appears in Example 4.13. The example given here (that is, the function  $\text{DISJ}_k$ , Example 2.12) is due to [Razborov 1990b]. The fact that the matrix corresponding to  $\text{DISJ}_k$  has full rank follows from the Ray–Chaudhury–Wilson Theorem (see [Babai and Frankl 1988]). The proof given here is completely different; it is based on homework of the students in the communication complexity class given at the Technion in 1994 by the first author.

Lemma 2.8 is a folklore fact. It was found independently by several people and, to the best of our knowledge, it was never published. Exercise 2.9 was suggested by J. Sgall. The best known answer with respect to Open Problem 2.10 is given by [Kushilevitz, Linial, and Ostrovsky 1996], where a small gap between  $D(f)$  and  $\log C^D(f)$  is shown.

The results of Section 2.4 are due to [Karchmer, Kushilevitz, and Nisan 1992a]. The proof of Theorem 2.16 is really a special case of a more general result of Lovász regarding the relation between the fractional cover number of a hypergraph and its cover number [Lovász 1975].

As mentioned, the rank lower bound was presented in [Mehlhorn and Schmidt 1982]. Increasing gaps between this lower bound and the communication complexity were demonstrated by [Alon and Seymour 1989, Razborov 1992] and [Raz and Spieker 1993]. The current gap (Example 2.19) is due to [Nisan and Widgerson 1994]. This was slightly improved by Kushilevitz (unpublished). Interesting examples of using the rank lower bound for matrices of a certain type are given by [Lovász and Saks 1988, Björner, Karlander, and Lindström 1992], and in [Faigle, Schrader, and Turan 1992].

Further aspects of nondeterministic communication complexity were studied in the work of [Dolev and Feder 1989, Fleischer 1989, Karchmer et al. 1992b].

## Cambridge Books Online

<http://ebooks.cambridge.org/>



Communication Complexity

Eyal Kushilevitz, Noam Nisan

Book DOI: <http://dx.doi.org/10.1017/CBO9780511574948>

Online ISBN: 9780511574948

Hardback ISBN: 9780521560672

Paperback ISBN: 9780521029834

Chapter

3 - Randomization pp. 28-41

Chapter DOI: <http://dx.doi.org/10.1017/CBO9780511574948.004>

Cambridge University Press

# CHAPTER 3

# Randomization

---

In the basic model of communication complexity, Alice and Bob were all powerful, but deterministic. This means that in any stage, when one of the players needs to communicate a bit, the value of this bit is a deterministic function of the player's input and the communication so far. In this chapter, we study what happens when Alice and Bob are allowed to act in a randomized fashion. That is, the players are also allowed to "toss coins" during the execution of the protocol and take into account the outcome of the coin tosses when deciding what messages to send. This implies that the communication on a given input  $(x, y)$  is not fixed anymore but instead it becomes a random variable. Similarly, the output computed by a randomized protocol on input  $(x, y)$  is also a random variable. As a result, the success of a randomized protocol can be defined in several ways. The first possibility, which is more conservative (sometimes called *Las-Vegas* protocols), is to consider only protocols that always output the correct value  $f(x, y)$ . The more liberal possibility is to allow protocols that may err, but for every input  $(x, y)$  are guaranteed to compute the correct value  $f(x, y)$  with high probability (sometimes called *Monte-Carlo* protocols). Similarly, the cost of a randomized protocol can also be defined in several ways. We can either analyze the worst case behavior of the protocol, or we can analyze the average case behavior.

## 3.1. Basic Definitions

As previously, Alice and Bob get  $x$  and  $y$ , respectively, as inputs. The twist is that Alice and Bob are also allowed to flip a random coin. Formally, Alice has access to a random string  $r_A$  of some arbitrary length, and similarly Bob has access to a random string  $r_B$ . These two strings are chosen independently, according to some probability distribution. When we look at the tree defining the protocol, then Alice's nodes are labeled by arbitrary functions of  $x$  and  $r_A$ , and Bob's nodes are labeled by arbitrary functions of  $y$  and  $r_B$ . As before, every combination of  $x, y, r_A$ , and  $r_B$  determines a leaf of the protocol tree where some value  $z$  is defined as the output of the protocol on  $(x, y)$ . It is possible that for a certain input  $(x, y)$ , with different choices of  $r_A$  and  $r_B$ ,

the protocol outputs different values. Hence, when randomization is allowed, protocols may err. The following definition gives the types of errors we consider:

**Definition 3.1:** Let  $\mathcal{P}$  be a randomized protocol. All the probabilities below are over the random choices of  $r_A$  and  $r_B$ .

- $\mathcal{P}$  computes a function  $f$  with zero error – if for every  $(x, y)$ ,

$$\Pr[\mathcal{P}(x, y) = f(x, y)] = 1.$$

- $\mathcal{P}$  computes a function  $f$  with  $\varepsilon$ -error – if for every  $(x, y)$ ,

$$\Pr[\mathcal{P}(x, y) = f(x, y)] \geq 1 - \varepsilon.$$

- $\mathcal{P}$  computes a function  $f$  with one-sided  $\varepsilon$ -error – if for every  $(x, y)$  such that  $f(x, y) = 0$ ,

$$\Pr[\mathcal{P}(x, y) = 0] = 1,$$

and for every  $(x, y)$  such that  $f(x, y) = 1$ ,

$$\Pr[\mathcal{P}(x, y) = 1] \geq 1 - \varepsilon.$$

Randomization not only allows us to get different values in different executions of the protocol but also allows the number of bits exchanged to vary in different executions on the same  $(x, y)$  (with different random strings  $r_A$  and  $r_B$ ). Hence, in the case of randomized protocols, there are two natural choices for the definition of the running time of the protocol on a given input  $(x, y)$ . We can measure the running time with respect to the *worst* random strings or with respect to the *average* random strings:

**Definition 3.2:** The worst case running time of a randomized protocol  $\mathcal{P}$  on input  $(x, y)$  is the maximum number of bits communicated for any choice of the random strings,  $r_A$  and  $r_B$ . The worst case cost of  $\mathcal{P}$  is the maximum, over all inputs  $(x, y)$ , of the worst case running time of  $\mathcal{P}$  on  $(x, y)$ .

The average case running time of a randomized protocol  $\mathcal{P}$  on input  $(x, y)$  is the expected number of bits communicated (or, equivalently, depth of leaves) over all choices of the random strings,  $r_A$  and  $r_B$ . The average case cost of  $\mathcal{P}$  is the maximum, over all inputs  $(x, y)$ , of the average case running time of  $\mathcal{P}$  on  $(x, y)$ .

The only distribution is on the random strings  $r_A$  and  $r_B$  and hence we can talk about the average number of bits exchanged for some fixed input  $(x, y)$ . We cannot talk about an “average input” since we have not yet defined a probability distribution on inputs. We will consider such a variant in Section 3.4.

The three different types of errors lead naturally to three complexity measures. In each case, the complexity is the cost of the “best” protocol that meets the error requirement. We choose the notion of “cost” to be either worst case or average case according to the type of error we allow:

**Definition 3.3:** Let  $f: X \times Y \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$  be a function. We consider the following complexity measures for  $f$ .

- $R_0(f)$  is the minimum average case cost of a randomized protocol that computes  $f$  with zero error.
- For  $0 < \varepsilon < 1/2$ ,  $R_\varepsilon(f)$  is the minimum worst case cost of a randomized protocol that computes  $f$  with error  $\varepsilon$ . We denote  $R(f) = R_{1/3}(f)$ .
- For  $0 < \varepsilon < 1$ ,  $R_\varepsilon^1(f)$  is the minimum worst case cost of a randomized protocol that computes  $f$  with one-sided error  $\varepsilon$ . We denote  $R^1(f) = R_{1/2}^1(f)$ .

The reader may get annoyed by the fact that we use worst case cost for protocols that allow error and average case cost for zero error protocols. In general, the worst case measure is more convenient to work with. For protocols with error, the complexity remains the same to within a multiplicative constant whether we use the worst case measure or the average case measure. More precisely, given a protocol  $\mathcal{P}$  that makes an error  $\varepsilon/2$  and the average number of bits exchanged is  $t$ , it can be modified as follows: execute  $\mathcal{P}$  as long as at most  $2t/\varepsilon$  bits are exchanged. If the protocol finishes, use its output; otherwise, output 0. By a simple counting argument, the probability that in  $\mathcal{P}$  more than  $2t/\varepsilon$  bits are exchanged is at most  $\varepsilon/2$ . Hence the error made by the modified protocol can be at most  $\varepsilon$  and the number of bits exchanged in the *worst case* is now  $2t/\varepsilon$ . (Also observe that if the original protocol makes a one-sided error, then so does the modified protocol.) Therefore, for protocols with errors we use the more convenient worst case cost. On the other hand, for zero error protocols, using the worst case cost gives exactly the deterministic communication complexity, because a deterministic protocol will simply fix some values for  $r_A$  and  $r_B$  and proceed. Therefore, for zero error protocols, the only interesting cost is the average case cost.

**Exercise 3.4:** The following are basic properties of the definitions given above:

- For  $0 < \varepsilon \leq \varepsilon' < 1/2$ ,  $R_\varepsilon(f) \leq O(\log_{\varepsilon'} \varepsilon \cdot R_{\varepsilon'}(f))$ . Conclude that the error probability can be reduced with a small penalty in the communication complexity. Hint: Start by proving the same relation with respect to  $R^1(f)$ . Then use Chernoff inequality to generalize your proof for  $R(f)$ .
- $R_\varepsilon(f) \leq R_\varepsilon^1(f) \leq O(\log \varepsilon^{-1}) R_0(f)$ .
- $R_0(f) = O(\max[R^1(f), R^1(\text{not}(f))])$ .

The following randomized protocol is an important example of the power of randomness.

- **Example 3.5:** Consider the equality function EQ. Denote the input of Alice by  $a = a_0a_1 \cdots a_{n-1}$ , and the input of Bob by  $b = b_0b_1 \cdots b_{n-1}$ . We think of these inputs as two polynomials over the field  $GF[p]$  where  $n^2 < p < 2n^2$  is a prime (theorems regarding the density of primes guarantee the existence of such  $p$ ). That is,

$$A(x) = a_0 + a_1x + \cdots + a_{n-1}x^{n-1} \pmod{p}$$

and

$$B(x) = b_0 + b_1x + \cdots + b_{n-1}x^{n-1} \pmod{p}.$$

Alice picks at random a number  $t$  in  $GF[p]$  and sends Bob the values  $t$  and  $A(t)$ . Bob outputs 1 if  $A(t) = B(t)$  and 0 otherwise. The number of bits exchanged is  $O(\log p) = O(\log n)$ . For the correctness, note first that if  $a = b$  then  $A(t) = B(t)$  for all  $t$ , so the output is always 1. If  $a \neq b$  we have two distinct polynomials  $A$  and  $B$  of degree  $n - 1$ . Such polynomials can be equal on at most  $n - 1$  (out of  $p$ ) elements of the field (since their difference is a non-zero polynomial of degree at most  $n - 1$ , which may have at most  $n - 1$  roots). Hence the probability of error is at most  $(n - 1)/p \leq n/n^2 = 1/n$ .

We have thus shown  $R(EQ) = O(\log n)$ , and in fact,  $R_{1/n}(EQ) = O(\log n)$ , and even more,  $R_{1/n}^1(NE) = O(\log n)$ . In contrast, recall that  $D(NE) = D(EQ) = n + 1$  (Example 1.21).

**Exercise 3.6:** Prove that the following protocol for  $\text{EQ}$  achieves similar performance. Alice and Bob view their inputs  $a$  and  $b$  as  $n$ -bit integers (between 1 and  $2^n$ ). Alice chooses a prime number  $p$  at random among the first  $n^2$  primes. She sends both  $p$  and  $a \bmod p$  to Bob. Bob checks whether  $a \bmod p = b \bmod p$ , and if so he outputs 1, otherwise he outputs 0.

## 3.2. Randomization Versus Determinism

How different can randomized complexity be from deterministic complexity? What kind of lower bounds can we prove for randomized complexity? Randomization without error, or even with one-sided error, cannot be stronger than nondeterminism. This is because in a nondeterministic protocol the players may simply “guess” the random choices leading to accepting paths. We thus have:

**Proposition 3.7:** *For every  $0 \leq \varepsilon < 1$ ,  $R_\varepsilon^1(f) \geq N^1(f)$ .*

A similar argument shows that  $R_0(f) \geq N(f)$  (the players can “guess” the random choices for which the computation ends within at most the average cost). In particular (by Theorem 2.11), this implies that  $R_0(f)$  may only be quadratically smaller than  $D(f)$ . Below we will give an example (Example 3.16) showing that this gap may be achieved. Example 3.5 above shows that for  $R^1(f)$  and  $R(f)$  the gap from the deterministic complexity may be exponential. Proposition 3.7 (together with Exercise 2.6) implies that no larger gap is possible for the one-sided complexity,  $R^1(f)$ . The following lemma shows that the same is true for  $R(f)$ .

**Lemma 3.8:**  $R(f) = \Omega(\log D(f))$ .

**PROOF:** We will prove a somewhat more delicate statement:

$$D(f) \leq 2^{R_\varepsilon(f)} \cdot \left( \log \left( \frac{1}{2} - \varepsilon \right)^{-1} + R_\varepsilon(f) \right).$$

For this, we present a deterministic simulation of a given randomized protocol  $\mathcal{P}$ . For each leaf  $\ell$  of the protocol  $\mathcal{P}$ , Alice will send Bob the value  $p_\ell^A$ , which is the probability (over the choices of  $r_A$ ) that, given her input  $x$ , she indeed responds according to the path leading to this leaf. Bob can then compute privately  $p_\ell^B$ , the probability (over the choices of  $r_B$ ) that, given his input  $y$ , he follows the path leading to the leaf  $\ell$ . He can then compute  $p_\ell = p_\ell^A \cdot p_\ell^B$ , which is the probability of reaching the leaf  $\ell$ . Because the players do this computation for each of the  $2^{R_\epsilon(f)}$  leaves (and because each leaf determines a single value, 0 or 1, as the output), Bob can check which of the values (0 or 1) has probability of at least  $1 - \epsilon$  and this is the correct value  $f(x, y)$ .

The difficulty is that this simulation requires sending *real* numbers (the probabilities). However, these real numbers need only be transmitted with precision of  $k = \log(\frac{1}{2} - \epsilon)^{-1} + R_\epsilon(f)$  bits. This guarantees that the value sent for each  $p_\ell^A$  is different from the true value by at most  $2^{-k} = (\frac{1}{2} - \epsilon)/2^{R_\epsilon(f)}$ . This implies that  $p_\ell$ , computed by Bob, is at most  $(\frac{1}{2} - \epsilon)/2^{R_\epsilon(f)}$ , far from the true value (since  $p_\ell^B \leq 1$ ). Hence the total error, over all the leaves  $\ell$ , is at most  $\frac{1}{2} - \epsilon$ . Therefore it suffices that Bob checks which of the values (0 or 1) has probability of more than  $1/2$  and this is the correct value  $f(x, y)$ .  $\square$

► **Example 3.9:** We can now completely analyze the randomized complexity of EQ and NE.

1.  $R^1(\text{EQ}) = \Theta(n)$ ,  $R_0(\text{EQ}) = R_0(\text{NE}) = \Theta(n)$ . These lower bounds follow from Proposition 3.7 and the nondeterministic lower bounds for EQ.
2.  $R(\text{EQ}) = R(\text{NE}) = \Theta(\log n)$ ,  $R^1(\text{NE}) = \Theta(\log n)$ . The upper bounds were derived above, and the lower bounds follow from the deterministic lower bounds for EQ and Lemma 3.8.

**Exercise 3.10:** Show that  $R(\text{GT}) = O(\log^2 n)$ . In contrast, by Exercise 2.7, both  $N^0(\text{GT})$  and  $N^1(\text{GT})$  (and thus also  $R^1(\text{GT})$ ) are linear. (See Exercise 3.18 for an improvement of this result.)

We do not have any technique that gives us better lower bounds for randomized complexity than for nondeterministic complexity.

**Open Problem 3.11:** Is  $R_0(f) = O(N(f))$ , for every Boolean function  $f$ ? (Clearly the gap can be at most quadratic since even  $D(f) = O(N(f)^2)$ .) How about  $R^1(f) = O(N^1(f))$ ?

### 3.3. Public Coin Versus Private Coin

In our definition of randomized protocols, each party has its own random coin to flip. Alice cannot see Bob's coin flips and vice versa. We could have allowed them to have a "public" coin, so that both Alice and Bob see the results of a single series of random coin flips. More formally, there exists a common random string  $r$  (chosen according to some probability distribution  $\Pi$ ), and in the protocol tree Alice's communication corresponds to functions of  $x$  and  $r$  and Bob's communication corresponds to functions of  $y$  and  $r$ . Alternatively, this can be viewed as a distribution,  $\{P_r\}_{r \in \Pi}$ , of deterministic protocols.

Alice and Bob choose together a string  $r$  (according to the probability distribution  $\Pi$ , and independently of  $x$  and  $y$ ) and then follow the deterministic protocol  $P_r$ .

**Definition 3.12:** A (randomized) public coin protocol is a probability distribution over deterministic protocols. The success probability of a public coin protocol on input  $(x, y)$  is the probability of choosing a (deterministic) protocol, according to the probability distribution  $\Pi$ , that computes  $f(x, y)$  correctly. We add a superscript “*pub*” to the notations to indicate public coin protocols. For example,  $R_\varepsilon^{\text{pub}}(f)$  is the minimum cost of a public coin protocol that computes  $f$  with an error of at most  $\varepsilon$  (for every input  $(x, y)$ ).

Note that, for example,  $R_\varepsilon^{\text{pub}}(f) \leq R_\varepsilon(f)$ . This is because a private coin protocol can be simulated by a public coin protocol where the public random string  $r$  is the concatenation of the random strings  $r_A$  and  $r_B$  needed by Alice and Bob (each is chosen according to the appropriate distribution and independently of the other).

- **Example 3.13:** The following is a public coin protocol for the function NE: Alice and Bob jointly choose a random  $n$ -bit string  $r$ . Alice computes the inner product  $b = \langle x, r \rangle$  and transmits it (a single bit) to Bob. Bob checks whether  $b = \langle y, r \rangle$  and outputs “equal” if so and “not equal” otherwise. Clearly, if  $x = y$  the output is always “equal.” On the other hand, if  $x \neq y$ , then by the properties of the inner product,

$$\Pr_r[\langle x, r \rangle \neq \langle y, r \rangle] = 1/2,$$

and thus Bob outputs “not equal” with probability 1/2. By repeating this procedure twice (with two independent  $r$ s) and deciding “equal” only if the inner product is equal in both of them, the error probability is reduced to  $\frac{1}{4} < \frac{1}{3}$ . We have thus shown  $R^{\text{pub}}(\text{NE}) = R^{\text{pub}}(\text{EQ}) = O(1)$ , and even  $R^{1,\text{pub}}(\text{NE}) = O(1)$ .

This example shows that the gap between  $D(f)$  and  $R^{\text{pub}}(f)$  may be arbitrarily large. Also, because we know that with private coin the equality function, EQ, requires  $\Omega(\log n)$  bits we see that public coin can be better than a private coin. It turns out that this is as good as they get. That is, any public coin protocol can be transformed into a private coin one with a small penalty in the error and a small additive penalty in the communication complexity. Formally,

**Theorem 3.14:** Let  $f: \{0, 1\}^n \times \{0, 1\}^n \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$  be a function. For every  $\delta > 0$  and every  $\varepsilon > 0$ ,  $R_{\varepsilon+\delta}(f) \leq R_\varepsilon^{\text{pub}}(f) + O(\log n + \log \delta^{-1})$ .

PROOF: It is sufficient to prove that any public coin protocol  $\mathcal{P}$ , using any number of random bits, can be transformed into another public coin protocol,  $\mathcal{P}'$ , with the same communication complexity that uses only  $O(\log n + \log \delta^{-1})$  random bits, while increasing the error by only  $\delta$ . The proof then follows because Alice can simply flip that many random coins by herself, send the random coin flips to Bob, and then the two players proceed as in  $\mathcal{P}'$ .

Let  $Z(x, y, r)$  be a random variable that gets the value 1 if the answer that  $\mathcal{P}$  gives on input  $(x, y)$  and random string  $r$  is wrong (that is, different than  $f(x, y)$ ) and 0 otherwise. Because  $\mathcal{P}$  computes  $f$  with  $\varepsilon$  error we have  $E_{r \in \Pi}[Z(x, y, r)] \leq \varepsilon$ , for all  $(x, y)$ . We will build a new protocol, which uses fewer random bits, using the probabilistic method. Let  $t$  be a parameter (to be fixed) and  $r_1, \dots, r_t$  be  $t$  strings. For such strings, define a protocol  $\mathcal{P}_{r_1, \dots, r_t}$  as follows: Alice and Bob choose  $1 \leq i \leq t$  uniformly at random and then proceed as in  $\mathcal{P}$  with  $r_i$  as their common random string. We now show that there exist strings  $r_1, \dots, r_t$  such that  $E_i[Z(x, y, r_i)] \leq \varepsilon + \delta$ , for all  $(x, y)$ . For this choice of strings the protocol  $\mathcal{P}_{r_1, \dots, r_t}$  is the desired protocol. To do so, we choose the  $t$  values  $r_1, \dots, r_t$  at random (according to the probability distribution  $\Pi$ ). Consider a particular input pair  $(x, y)$  and compute the probability that  $E_i[Z(x, y, r_i)] > \varepsilon + \delta$  (where  $i$  in this expectation is uniformly distributed). This is exactly the probability that  $\frac{1}{t} \sum_{i=1}^t Z(x, y, r_i) > \varepsilon + \delta$ . By the Chernoff inequality, since  $E_r[Z(x, y, r)] \leq \varepsilon$ , we get

$$\Pr_{r_1, \dots, r_t} \left[ \left( \frac{1}{t} \sum_{i=1}^t Z(x, y, r_i) - \varepsilon \right) > \delta \right] \leq 2e^{-2\delta^2 t}.$$

By choosing  $t = O(n/\delta^2)$ , this is smaller than  $2^{-2n}$ . Thus, for a random choice of  $r_1, \dots, r_t$  the probability that for *some* input  $(x, y)$ ,  $E_i[Z(x, y, r_i)] > \varepsilon + \delta$  is smaller than  $2^{2n} \cdot 2^{-2n} = 1$ . This implies that there exists a choice of  $r_1, \dots, r_t$  where for *every*  $(x, y)$  the error of the protocol  $\mathcal{P}_{r_1, \dots, r_t}$  is at most  $\varepsilon + \delta$ . Finally, note that the number of random bits used by the protocol  $\mathcal{P}_{r_1, \dots, r_t}$  is  $\log t = O(\log n + \log \delta^{-1})$  and that the communication complexity is bounded by the communication complexity of  $\mathcal{P}$ .  $\square$

A very similar theorem holds for one-sided protocols. The case of zero error protocols is slightly different:

**Exercise 3.15:** Show that  $R_0(f) = O(R_0^{pub}(f) + \log n)$ .

The following example shows that sometimes it is much easier to provide public coin protocols than private ones.

► **Example 3.16:** Recall the function  $\text{DISJ}_k$  from Example 2.12, whose deterministic communication complexity is  $\log \binom{n}{k}$ . We provide an  $O(k)$  bit protocol using a public coin. This implies that (using a private coin)  $R(\text{DISJ}_k) = O(k + \log n)$ . Let  $x$  be Alice's set and  $y$  be Bob's set.

The public coin flips will denote a sequence of random subsets  $S_1, S_2, \dots$  of  $\{1, \dots, n\}$ . The two players maintain an index  $i$  of the “current set” in the sequence that always increases (initially  $i = 0$ ). In each iteration of the protocol Alice finds the first  $i$  in the sequence (with  $i$  greater than the index of the current set) such that  $S_i$  contains the set  $x$  and sends Bob the distance from the current set to  $i$ . Bob then replaces  $y$  by  $y \cap S_i$ . Then, Bob finds the first  $j > i$  in the sequence such that  $S_j$  contains (the new)  $y$  and sends the distance from  $i$  to  $j$  to Alice. Alice now replaces  $x$  by  $x \cap S_j$ . They continue with this procedure until either  $x$  or  $y$  becomes empty – in this case they announce “disjoint,” or else until more than  $ck$  bits have been communicated (for some constant  $c$ ) – in this case they announce “not disjoint.”

It is easy to verify that if  $x$  and  $y$  were disjoint originally, then they remain so during the protocol. On the other hand, if  $x$  and  $y$  intersect originally, then their intersection belongs to both  $x$  and  $y$  during the whole protocol. Hence, it follows that for intersecting  $(x, y)$  the protocol never errs. To analyze the protocol for disjoint  $(x, y)$ , we note that the expected size of  $y$  (and  $x$ ) is halved in every iteration (since  $x$  and  $y$  are disjoint, the fact that  $x \subseteq S_i$  has no influence on  $y$ 's elements; that is, every element of  $y$  belongs to  $S_i$  with probability  $1/2$ ). Because the probability that a random  $S_i$  contains a certain set of size  $s$  is exactly  $2^{-s}$ , it follows that the expected number of bits communicated by Alice (respectively Bob) when  $x$  (respectively  $y$ ) is of size  $s$  is  $O(s)$  (the expected number of sets before the next  $S_i$  that contains a certain set of size  $s$  is exactly  $2^s$ . However, the expected number of bits communicated is *not exactly*  $s$ ). Thus, the expected number of bits that should be exchanged before  $x$  or  $y$  become empty is  $O(k)$ . As discussed in Section 3.1, by multiplying this number of bits by  $1/\varepsilon$  we can guarantee that the protocol always stops within  $O(k/\varepsilon)$  bits (which is  $O(k)$  for fixed  $\varepsilon$ ) and errs with probability at most  $\varepsilon$ . Hence,  $R^{pub}(\text{DISJ}_k) = O(k)$ .

**Exercise 3.17:** The above protocol has one-sided error. Modify this protocol to prove that  $R_0^{pub}(\text{DISJ}_k)$  and hence  $R_0(\text{DISJ}_k)$  are  $O(k + \log n)$ . Conclude (by substituting  $k = O(\log n)$ ) that the gap between deterministic and zero error randomized communication complexity may be quadratic (by Section 3.2, this is the maximal possible gap).

**Exercise 3.18\***: Prove that  $R^{pub}(\text{GT}) = O(\log n)$ . Conclude that  $R(\text{GT}) = O(\log n)$ , improving over Exercise 3.10. (An easier task is to prove that  $R^{pub}(\text{GT}) = O(\log n \log \log n)$ , which is already an improvement over Exercise 3.10.)

### 3.4. Distributional Complexity

In this section we present a technique that provides lower bounds for randomized protocols that are allowed two-sided error. For this purpose, we present a model of distributional communication complexity in which we consider a probability distribution over the *inputs*. This is in opposition to the model of randomized protocols, in which we have only considered a probability space on the random choices by the players and we considered worst case inputs.

**Definition 3.19:** Let  $\mu$  be a probability distribution on  $X \times Y$ . The  $(\mu, \varepsilon)$ -distributional communication complexity of  $f$ ,  $D_\varepsilon^\mu(f)$ , is the cost of the best deterministic protocol that gives the correct answer for  $f$  on at least a  $1 - \varepsilon$  fraction of all inputs in  $X \times Y$ , weighted by  $\mu$ .

For example,  $D_{1/4}^{\text{uniform}}(\text{GT}) \leq 2$ : Alice sends Bob  $x_1$ , the most significant bit of  $x$ , and Bob, by comparing  $x_1$  with  $y_1$  can compute the correct answer for at least  $3/4$  of the input pairs (that is, if  $x_1 \neq y_1$ , then the number that starts with “1” is the larger, whereas if  $x_1 = y_1$ , Bob decides that, say,  $\text{GT}(x, y) = 0$ ; that is,  $y$  is larger). As can be seen in Figure 3.1 (for the case  $n = 3$ ), the protocol partitions  $\{0, 1\}^n \times \{0, 1\}^n$  into four rectangles. Two of them (the lower left and the upper right) are monochromatic

|     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |
|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|
| 000 | 001 | 010 | 011 | 100 | 101 | 110 | 111 |
| 000 | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   |
| 001 | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   |
| 010 | 1   | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   |
| 011 | 1   | 1   | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   |
| 100 | 1   | 1   | 1   | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   |
| 101 | 1   | 1   | 1   | 1   | 1   | 0   | 0   |
| 110 | 1   | 1   | 1   | 1   | 1   | 1   | 0   |
| 111 | 1   | 1   | 1   | 1   | 1   | 1   | 0   |

**Figure 3.1:** A protocol for the “greater than” function,  $\text{GT}$ , with low distributional communication complexity

with respect to  $\text{GT}$  and so the output of the protocol is always correct. The other two are not monochromatic, and so the protocol is wrong for every pair  $(x, y)$  in these two rectangles for which  $\text{GT}(x, y) = 1$ .

In the next section we will see a lower bound technique for distributional communication complexity. It is easy to see that for every probability distribution  $\mu$ , the measure  $D_\varepsilon^\mu(f)$  provides a lower bound on  $R_\varepsilon(f)$ . It turns out that such bounds completely suffice to characterize the public coin complexity.

**Theorem 3.20:**  $R_\varepsilon^{\text{pub}}(f) = \max_\mu D_\varepsilon^\mu(f)$ .

**PROOF:** The  $\geq$  direction is simple: the randomized protocol is correct for *every* input with probability  $\geq 1 - \varepsilon$ . Therefore, for each  $\mu$ , the randomized protocol is correct with probability  $\geq 1 - \varepsilon$ , where the probability is taken over both the public coin flips and the random input. It follows by a counting argument, that for some fixed choice of the public coin flips, a probability of success larger than  $1 - \varepsilon$  is achieved, where this time the probability is taken only over the inputs.

For the  $\leq$  direction, let  $c = \max_\mu D_\varepsilon^\mu(f)$ . Consider a two-player zero-sum game as follows. Player 1 chooses a deterministic  $c$ -bit communication protocol  $\mathcal{P}$ . Player 2 chooses an arbitrary input  $(x, y) \in X \times Y$  (neither player knows the particular choice of the other player). The payoff for Player 1 is 1 if  $\mathcal{P}(x, y) = f(x, y)$  and 0 otherwise. Using this terminology, the fact that for every  $\mu$ , the distributional communication complexity,  $D_\varepsilon^\mu(f)$ , is at most  $c$  means that for every randomized (or “mixed”) strategy of Player 2 (which is just a probability distribution  $\mu$  on  $X \times Y$ ), Player 1 can obtain payoff  $1 - \varepsilon$ . We can now use the min–max theorem of zero-sum games, which says that in such a case Player 1 also has a randomized strategy that provides the same payoff for *every* choice of Player 2. Such a randomized strategy is a distribution on  $c$ -bit deterministic protocols (that is, a randomized protocol with a public coin) that is correct on every input with probability  $\geq 1 - \varepsilon$ .  $\square$

**Exercise 3.21:** Show that a similar connection holds for zero error randomized communication complexity. That is, for a distribution  $\mu$ , denote by  $D_0^\mu(f)$  the expected communication used

by a deterministic protocol for  $f$  (expectation taken over all inputs, weighted by  $\mu$ ). Prove that  $R_0^{\text{pub}}(f) = \max_{\mu} D_0^{\mu}(f)$ .

Based on the above theorem (and exercise) a possible way of proving lower bounds on *randomized* communication complexity is by choosing a “convenient” probability distribution  $\mu$  and proving lower bounds on the *distributional* communication complexity with respect to  $\mu$ .

- **Example 3.22:** Consider the function  $\text{DISJ}$  (Example 1.23). In Section 4.6 we will prove that there exist two sets of inputs  $A \subseteq \text{DISJ}^{-1}(1)$  and  $B \subseteq \text{DISJ}^{-1}(0)$ , a probability distribution  $\mu$ , and positive constants  $\alpha$  and  $\delta$  such that (1)  $\mu(A) = 3/4$ , and (2) for every rectangle  $R$ ,  $\mu(R \cap B) \geq \alpha \cdot \mu(R \cap A) - 2^{-\delta n}$ . In words, we have a lower bound on the weight of  $B$ -elements in every rectangle as a function of the weight of  $A$ -elements (in particular, only rectangles in which  $\mu(R \cap A)$  is very small may be 1-monochromatic).

We use this to prove  $D_{\varepsilon}^{\mu}(\text{DISJ}) \geq \delta n - O(1)$  for sufficiently small  $\varepsilon$ . Suppose  $D_{\varepsilon}^{\mu}(\text{DISJ}) = k$ . Then, the appropriate protocol induces a partition of  $\{0, 1\}^n \times \{0, 1\}^n$  into (at most)  $2^k$  rectangles. Let  $R_1, \dots, R_t$  ( $t \leq 2^k$ ) be those rectangles in which the protocol announces “1” as the output. Because we allow at most  $\varepsilon$  error, and because we assumed  $\mu(A) = 3/4$ , we get  $\mu(\bigcup_{i=1}^t (R_i \cap A)) \geq \frac{3}{4} - \varepsilon$ . On the other hand, for each element of  $B$  that appears in these rectangles we make a mistake. Hence, the error of the protocol is at least

$$\mu\left(\bigcup_{i=1}^t (R_i \cap B)\right) \geq \sum_{i=1}^t (\alpha \cdot \mu(R_i \cap A) - 2^{-\delta n}) \geq \alpha \cdot \left(\frac{3}{4} - \varepsilon\right) - 2^{k-\delta n}.$$

However, by assumptions, the error of the protocol is at most  $\varepsilon$ . Combining these two facts,  $\alpha \cdot \left(\frac{3}{4} - \varepsilon\right) - 2^{k-\delta n} \leq \varepsilon$ , which implies, for small enough  $\varepsilon$ , that  $k \geq \delta n - O(1)$ .

**Open Problem 3.23:** How far can the best lower bound obtained using this technique be from the true randomized complexity?

Distributions in which  $x$  and  $y$  are chosen *independently* are sometimes of interest:

**Definition 3.24:** A distribution  $\mu$  over  $X \times Y$  is called *rectangular* (or a *product distribution*) if for some distributions  $\mu_X$  over  $X$  and  $\mu_Y$  over  $Y$ ,  $\mu(x, y) = \mu_X(x) \cdot \mu_Y(y)$ . Denote  $R^{\square}(f) = \max_{\mu} D^{\mu}(f)$ , where the maximum is taken over all rectangular distributions  $\mu$ .

In the proof of Theorem 3.20 it is important that  $\mu$  may range over *all* distributions over  $X \times Y$ . Indeed, the following exercise shows that the theorem does not hold for rectangular distributions.

**Exercise 3.25:** Prove that  $R^{\square}(\text{DISJ}) = O(\sqrt{n} \log n)$ . Contrast this result with the fact that  $R(\text{DISJ}) = \Theta(n)$  (Example 3.22). For the uniform distribution (which is rectangular), show that  $D^{\text{uniform}}(\text{DISJ}) = \Theta(\sqrt{n})$ .

**Open Problem 3.26:** Is  $R(f) = (R^{\square}(f))^{O(1)}$ ?

### 3.5. Discrepancy

The most natural method to prove lower bounds for  $D_\varepsilon^\mu$  is by giving upper bounds for the size of rectangles that are “almost” monochromatic. An extreme case of this method would be to show, for a certain function  $f$ , that every large enough rectangle must be almost completely balanced between 1s of the function and 0s of the function. In such a case we can use only “small” rectangles and hence need “many” rectangles. This can be thought of as a generalization of the rectangle size method (Section 1.3), where now protocols can make mistakes but they are still deterministic. We start with a definition:

**Definition 3.27:** Let  $f: X \times Y \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$  be a function,  $R$  be any rectangle, and  $\mu$  be a probability distribution on  $X \times Y$ . Denote

$$\begin{aligned} Disc_\mu(R, f) \\ = \left| \Pr_{\mu}[f(x, y) = 0 \text{ and } (x, y) \in R] - \Pr_{\mu}[f(x, y) = 1 \text{ and } (x, y) \in R] \right|. \end{aligned}$$

The discrepancy of  $f$  according to  $\mu$  is

$$Disc_\mu(f) = \max_R Disc_\mu(R, f),$$

where the maximum is taken over all rectangles  $R$ .

Note that for every *monochromatic* rectangle  $R$ ,  $Disc_\mu(R, f) = \mu(R)$ . The definition becomes more interesting for nonmonochromatic rectangles. Consider the function of Figure 3.2, and let  $\mu$  be the uniform distribution on  $\{0, 1\}^3 \times \{0, 1\}^3$ . That is, every input  $(x, y)$  has weight  $\mu(x, y) = 1/64$ . The rectangle  $R$  shown in the figure has 29 0-entries (whose weight is therefore 29/64) and seven 1-entries (whose weight is therefore 7/64). Hence,  $Disc_\mu(R, f) = 22/64$ .

Bounds on the discrepancy turn out to be strong enough to give lower bounds for  $D_\varepsilon^\mu$ , even when  $\varepsilon$  is very close to 1/2.

**Proposition 3.28:** For every function  $f: X \times Y \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$ , every probability distribution  $\mu$  on  $X \times Y$ , and every  $\varepsilon \geq 0$ ,  $D_{\frac{1}{2}-\varepsilon}^\mu(f) \geq \log_2(2\varepsilon/Disc_\mu(f))$ .

|     | 000 | 001 | 010 | 011 | 100 | 101 | 110 | 111 |
|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|
| 000 | 0   | 1   | 1   | 0   | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   |
| 001 | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 1   |
| 010 | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   |
| 011 | 0   | 0   | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 1   |
| 100 | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 1   | 0   | 0   | 1   |
| 101 | 1   | 1   | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 1   | 1   |
| 110 | 0   | 0   | 0   | 1   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0   |
| 111 | 0   | 1   | 1   | 0   | 1   | 1   | 0   | 1   |

Figure 3.2: A rectangle with large discrepancy

PROOF: Let  $\mathcal{P}$  be a protocol using  $c$  bits of communication attempting to compute  $f$ , which is correct with probability at least  $1/2 + \varepsilon$ . We can now write

$$\begin{aligned} 2\varepsilon &\leq \Pr_{\mu}[\mathcal{P}(x, y) = f(x, y)] - \Pr_{\mu}[\mathcal{P}(x, y) \neq f(x, y)] \\ &= \sum_{\ell} \left( \Pr_{\mu}[\mathcal{P}(x, y) = f(x, y) \text{ and } (x, y) \in R_{\ell}] \right. \\ &\quad \left. - \Pr_{\mu}[\mathcal{P}(x, y) \neq f(x, y) \text{ and } (x, y) \in R_{\ell}] \right) \end{aligned}$$

where the summation is over all leaves  $\ell$  of the protocol. Since for each leaf a specific output (0 or 1) is given, we can bound this expression from above by

$$\sum_{\ell} \left| \Pr_{\mu}[f(x, y) = 0 \text{ and } (x, y) \in R_{\ell}] - \Pr_{\mu}[f(x, y) = 1 \text{ and } (x, y) \in R_{\ell}] \right|.$$

Since for each  $\ell$ ,  $R_{\ell}$  is a rectangle, each of these (at most)  $2^c$  terms is bounded from above by  $Disc_{\mu}(f)$ . Thus, we get  $2^c Disc_{\mu}(f) \geq 2\varepsilon$ , which implies  $c \geq \log(2\varepsilon/Disc_{\mu}(f))$ , as claimed.  $\square$

We are now ready to use the technique. In Exercise 3.31 you are asked to prove that, for a *random* function, the distributional communication complexity is at least  $n - O(\log(1/\varepsilon))$ . The next example shows a similar bound for an explicit function.

► **Example 3.29:** Consider again the inner product function, IP (Example 1.25). We will show that  $Disc_{uniform}(IP) = 2^{-n/2}$ , and hence  $D_{\frac{1}{2}-\varepsilon}^{uniform}(IP) \geq n/2 - \log(1/\varepsilon)$ , and thus  $R_{\frac{1}{2}-\varepsilon}^{pub}(IP) \geq n/2 - \log(1/\varepsilon)$ .

Let  $H$  be a  $2^n \times 2^n$  matrix where  $H(x, y) = 1$  if  $(x, y) = 0$ , and  $H(x, y) = -1$  otherwise. The first observation is that  $HH^T = 2^n I$ , where  $I$  is the identity matrix. This is because the  $(x, y)$  entry of the matrix  $HH^T$  is (by definition of matrix multiplication)  $\sum_z H(x, z) \cdot H(z, y)$ . By the properties of the inner product, if  $x = y$ , then  $H(x, z) = H(z, y)$ , therefore each of the summands equals 1 and the sum is  $2^n$ . On the other hand, if  $x \neq y$ , then for 1/2 of the  $z$ s  $H(x, z) = H(z, y)$  (in which case the summand is 1) and for 1/2 of the  $z$ s  $H(x, z) \neq H(z, y)$  (in which case the summand is  $-1$ ). Therefore in this case the sum is 0. Using this observation, the *norm* of  $H$  satisfies  $\|H\| = \sqrt{2^n}$ , since for all vectors  $v$ ,  $vHH^T = 2^n v$  and hence  $2^n$  is the only eigenvalue of  $HH^T$ . Consider a rectangle  $S \times T$  in  $H$ . Note that

$$Disc_{uniform}(S \times T, IP) = \frac{|\sum_{x \in S, y \in T} H(x, y)|}{2^{2n}} = \frac{|\vec{1}_S \cdot H \cdot \vec{1}_T|}{2^{2n}},$$

where  $\vec{1}_S$  and  $\vec{1}_T$  are the characteristic vectors of  $S$  and  $T$ , respectively. This we can bound from above by the product of the norms,  $\|\vec{1}_S\| \cdot \|H\| \cdot \|\vec{1}_T\| = \sqrt{|S|} \sqrt{2^n} \sqrt{|T|}$ . Finally, because  $|S|, |T| \leq 2^n$ , we get

$$Disc_{uniform}(IP) = \max_{S, T} Disc_{uniform}(S \times T, IP) \leq \frac{\sqrt{2^{3n}}}{2^{2n}} = 2^{-n/2},$$

as desired.

**Exercise 3.30:** Prove that in fact,  $R_{\frac{1}{2}-\varepsilon}(\text{IP}) \geq n - O(\log(1/\varepsilon))$ .

**Exercise 3.31:** Prove that for “most” Boolean functions  $D_{\frac{1}{2}-\varepsilon}^{\text{uniform}}(f) = n - O(\log \frac{1}{\varepsilon})$ . That is, only an exponentially small fraction of the functions have better complexity. Hint: Pick a function at random and compute the probability that it has a “large,” “almost monochromatic” rectangle.

**Exercise 3.32:** Let  $\text{Disc}(f) = \min_\mu \text{Disc}_\mu(f)$ .

- Prove that  $\text{Disc}(\text{DISJ}) \geq 1/(2n+1)$ .
- Prove that for every function  $f$ ,  $R^{\text{pub}}(f) \leq (1/\text{Disc}(f))^{O(1)}$ . Hint: Use the distributional complexity.

The above exercise shows that the discrepancy technique sometimes gives only very poor bounds. Particularly, for the disjointness function, DISJ, it gives only a logarithmic lower bound, whereas Example 3.22 shows that in fact the randomized communication complexity of DISJ is linear. The only other lower bound technique known for two-sided error randomized complexity is the method used in Example 3.22, which is essentially a generalization of the technique of giving an upper bound on the discrepancy.

### 3.6. Bibliographic Notes

Randomized communication complexity was also defined in the seminal paper [Yao 1979]. The  $O(\log n)$  randomized protocol for EQ (the version given in Exercise 3.6) was found by Rabin and Yao. The randomized communication complexity of the GT function was studied by Nisan and Safra, see in [Nisan 1993]. Example 3.16 is due to Håstad and Wigderson (private communication). Open Problem 3.11 was suggested in [Beame and Lawry 1992].

The relations between the public coin model of randomized protocols and the private coin model were studied by [Newman 1991]. The relations between the number of random bits used by randomized protocols and their communication complexity are studied in [Canetti and Goldreich 1990, Fleischer, Jung, and Melhorn 1990].

The relations between distributional complexity and randomized complexity, are a general phenomena exhibited by [Yao 1983], based on von-Neumann’s min–max theorem of game theory (see, for example, [Owen 1982]). The distributional communication complexity of the inner product function, IP, was studied by [Chor and Goldreich 1985], improving on a result of [Vazirani 1985]. The proof presented here (in Example 3.29) is similar to the proof in [Chor and Goldreich 1985] (see also [Babai, Frankl, and Simon 1986]), which is based on a lemma by Lindsey. The proof does not hold only for the function IP, but it can be extended to any function  $f$  whose corresponding matrix is a so-called *Hadamard* matrix. The distributional (and randomized) communication complexity of the disjointness function (Example 3.22) was first handled by [Babai et al. 1986]. Their result was improved by [Kalyanasundaram and Schnitger 1987]. A

### 3.6. BIBLIOGRAPHIC NOTES

simplified proof was presented by [Razborov 1990a] (see Section 4.6). Exercise 3.25 is due to [Babai et al. 1986].

An “unbounded” version of randomized communication complexity, with a weaker success requirement, was considered by [Paturi and Simon 1984] and [Alon, Frankl, and Rödl 1985]. The “unbounded” model exhibits a different behavior than the model described here as, for example, the communication complexity of the function EQ is  $O(1)$  in the “unbounded” model in opposition to  $\Theta(\log n)$  in the standard (private coin) model.

**PART TWO**

# **Other Models of Communication**



## Cambridge Books Online

<http://ebooks.cambridge.org/>



Communication Complexity

Eyal Kushilevitz, Noam Nisan

Book DOI: <http://dx.doi.org/10.1017/CBO9780511574948>

Online ISBN: 9780511574948

Hardback ISBN: 9780521560672

Paperback ISBN: 9780521029834

## Chapter

4 - Advanced Topics pp. 42-68

Chapter DOI: <http://dx.doi.org/10.1017/CBO9780511574948.005>

Cambridge University Press

# CHAPTER 4

## Advanced Topics

---

In this chapter we consider several, more advanced, topics related to the two-party communication model.

### 4.1. Direct Sum

The direct-sum problem is the following: Alice gets two inputs  $x_f \in X_f$  and  $x_g \in X_g$ . Bob gets two inputs  $y_f \in Y_f$  and  $y_g \in Y_g$ . They wish to compute both  $f(x_f, y_f)$  and  $g(x_g, y_g)$ . The obvious solution would be for Alice and Bob to use the best protocol for  $f$  to compute the first value,  $f(x_f, y_f)$ , and the best protocol for  $g$  to compute the second value,  $g(x_g, y_g)$ . We stress that the two subproblems are totally independent. Thus one would tend to conjecture that nothing better than the obvious solution can be done: Alice and Bob cannot “save” any communication over the obvious protocol. As we shall see, in some cases and for some measures of complexity, this intuition is wrong.

Denote by  $D(f, g)$  the (deterministic) communication complexity of this computation. Similarly, we define all other complexity measures such as  $R(f, g)$ ,  $N(f, g)$ , and so forth. We also use the notation  $D(f^\ell)$  as the (deterministic) communication complexity of computing  $f$  on  $\ell$  instances; that is, computing  $f(x_1, y_1), f(x_2, y_2), \dots, f(x_\ell, y_\ell)$ .

**Open Problem 4.1:** Can  $D(f, g)$  be smaller than  $D(f) + D(g)$ ? How much smaller can it be? How much smaller can  $D(f^\ell)$  be compared to  $\ell \cdot D(f)$ ?

In some cases we are not interested in computing both  $f$  and  $g$  but rather some function of the two. For example, consider the function  $f \wedge g[(x_f, x_g), (y_f, y_g)] = f(x_f, y_f) \wedge g(x_g, y_g)$ . Obviously  $D(f \wedge g) \leq D(f, g)$ . Again, we can ask:

**Open Problem 4.2:** Can  $D(f \wedge g)$  be smaller than  $D(f) + D(g)$ ? How much smaller?

These problems try to attack a very basic question about the model of communication complexity: Can we solve two problems in this model simultaneously in a way that is

better than to solve each of the two problems separately? In other words, does the model behave as our intuition suggests it should, or does it have some surprising phenomena?

We present several results that handle questions of this type relative to several of the complexity measures introduced in the previous chapters. (For additional results see Lemma 4.60 and Example 4.61) We start by showing that, for randomized communication complexity, Alice and Bob can indeed “save.” In contrast, we show that for nondeterministic communication complexity, Alice and Bob cannot “save” too much (but can still “save a little”). The most interesting case, the deterministic communication complexity, remains wide open.

### 4.1.1. The Randomized Case

In the randomized case we can present a function  $f$  such that the complexity of computing  $f^\ell$  is significantly smaller than the obvious. Let us first remark that we require a randomized protocol for  $f^\ell$  to be correct with probability  $2/3$  *simultaneously* on all  $\ell$  instances. This may eliminate the possibility of computing  $f^\ell$  simply by executing the best randomized protocol for  $f$  on each of the  $\ell$  instances (as this only guarantees that for each instance there is a probability of at least  $2/3$  to compute the correct answer).

- **Example 4.3:** Consider the equality function. By Example 3.9,  $R(\text{EQ}) = \Theta(\log n)$ . We present a protocol for  $\text{EQ}^\ell$  that does much better than  $\ell \cdot \log n$ .

The protocol is obtained by considering first the public coin model. Example 3.13 gives an  $O(1)$  public coin protocol that errs with probability at most  $1/3$  if  $x \neq y$  and is always correct if  $x = y$ . If the protocol is repeated  $\log 3\ell$  times then it computes the equality function with  $O(\log \ell)$  bits and error of at most  $1/3\ell$ . Repeating this process for each of the  $\ell$  instances, we can compute  $\text{EQ}^\ell$ , in the public coin model, with  $O(\ell \log \ell)$  bits and probability of making even a single error of at most  $1/3$ . Finally, by Theorem 3.14 (and observing that for the proof of this theorem  $f$  need not be Boolean), the cost of transforming this protocol to the private coin model is an additive factor of  $O(\log(\ell n))$ , since  $\ell n$  is the total size of the input. All together,  $R(\text{EQ}^\ell) = O(\ell \log \ell + \log n)$ . For example, for  $\ell = \log n$ , we get

$$R(\text{EQ}^{\log n}) = O(\log n \log \log n) \ll (\log n) \cdot R(\text{EQ}) = \Theta(\log^2 n).$$

This type of saving comes in handy when we are given a single problem that contains many instances of EQ. In fact, sometimes additional saving is possible when we do not require all the different answers, but rather only a single answer that depends on them. Such an example is given next:

- **Example 4.4:** Consider the list-nonequality function  $\text{LNE}_{\ell,k}(x, y)$ : Alice views her input  $x$  (an  $n = \ell k$  bit string) as consisting of  $\ell$  blocks  $x^1, \dots, x^\ell$  of  $k$  bits each. Bob views his input  $y$  in a similar way.  $\text{LNE}_{\ell,k}(x, y) = 1$  if and only if  $x^j \neq y^j$  for all  $j$ . By using the protocol of Example 4.3 to compute all equalities, we get that  $R(\text{LNE}_{\ell,k}) = O(\ell \log \ell + \log k)$ . We now improve over this bound and show that  $R(\text{LNE}_{\ell,k}) = O(\ell + \log k)$ . Again, it suffices to prove  $R^{\text{pub}}(\text{LNE}_{\ell,k}) = O(\ell)$ . For this, Alice and Bob use the following protocol:

- Let  $j = 1$ .
- While  $j \leq \ell$  do at most  $4\ell$  times:  
Alice and Bob choose (without any communication) a random string  $r \in \{0, 1\}^k$ . They compare the inner product of  $r$  with  $x^j$  and  $y^j$ . If  $\langle x^j, r \rangle \neq \langle y^j, r \rangle$ , then certainly  $x^j \neq y^j$  and they proceed to the next block by setting  $j = j + 1$ . Otherwise, if  $\langle x^j, r \rangle = \langle y^j, r \rangle$  they do nothing (so in the next iteration they will compare again the  $j$ -th blocks).
- If all blocks were compared (that is,  $j > \ell$ ) the output is 1. Otherwise, the output is 0.

Since there are at most  $4\ell$  iterations and two bits are exchanged in each iteration, the complexity of this protocol is  $O(\ell)$  bits. Clearly, if there is a block  $j_0$  such that  $x^{j_0} = y^{j_0}$ , then for all  $r$ ,  $\langle x^{j_0}, r \rangle = \langle y^{j_0}, r \rangle$ . Hence,  $j$  never exceeds  $j_0$  and the protocol always outputs the correct answer (that is, 0). If no such block exists, the probability that Alice and Bob will not eliminate all blocks is the probability that in  $4\ell$  independent trials, with probability  $1/2$  of success in each of them, Alice and Bob will have less than  $\ell$  successes. This probability is  $\sum_{i=0}^{\ell-1} \binom{4\ell}{i} / 2^{4\ell}$ , which is exponentially small.

The above protocol has one-sided error. With slightly more efforts we can give a zero error protocol for LNE.

- **Example 4.5:** Consider again the list-nonduality function LNE. We now show that also  $R_0(\text{LNE}_{\ell,k}) = O(\ell + k)$ . In Example 4.13 we show that  $D(\text{LNE}_{\ell,k}) = \Omega(k\ell)$ . Thus, for the choice of  $\ell = k = \sqrt{n}$  this gives the largest gap possible between deterministic communication complexity and zero error randomized communication complexity (see Section 3.2).

To see that  $R_0(\text{LNE}) = O(\ell + k)$ , we consider first the public coin model and then, using Exercise 3.15, transform the protocol to the private coin model with an additive factor of  $O(\log(\ell k))$  to the complexity. The protocol is a modification of the protocol given in Example 4.4 in which we eliminate the possibility of error by adding a verification for the equality of  $x^j$  and  $y^j$  at the end. More precisely, Alice and Bob do the following block by block (they stop if they find a block in which  $x^j = y^j$ ). They exchange the inner product of  $x^j$  and  $y^j$  with a random vector  $r \in \{0, 1\}^k$  (from the public random string). If  $\langle x^j, r \rangle \neq \langle y^j, r \rangle$ , then  $x^j \neq y^j$  so Alice and Bob proceed to the next block. If  $\langle x^j, r \rangle = \langle y^j, r \rangle$ , they repeat this with another random string. If after  $k$  times all inner products are equal they simply exchange the blocks  $x^j$  and  $y^j$  themselves. They output 0 if  $x^j = y^j$ . If  $x^j \neq y^j$ , they proceed to the next  $j$ . The correctness of the protocol is obvious. For the complexity of the protocol, note that if  $x^j = y^j$ , then  $O(k)$  bits are exchanged. However, this is done at most once (for the first such  $j$ ). On the other hand, when  $x^j \neq y^j$  the probability that  $\langle x^j, r \rangle = \langle y^j, r \rangle$  is  $1/2$  at each test. Hence, the expected number of bits exchanged for such a block is  $\sum_{i=1}^k \frac{1}{2} 2i + \frac{1}{2} 2k = O(1)$ , since  $\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{i}{2^i} = 2$ . By linearity of expectation, these blocks contribute  $O(\ell)$  bits to the complexity.

The question of what are the largest possible gaps in randomized communication complexity remains open for all the different measures. For example,

**Open Problem 4.6:** Does there exist  $f$  such that  $R^{\text{pub}}(f^\ell) < \ell \cdot R^{\text{pub}}(f)$ ? How big can the gap be?

**Exercise 4.6a:** Show that  $R^{\text{pub}}(f^\ell) = O(\ell \cdot \log \ell \cdot R^{\text{pub}}(f))$ , for all  $f$

#### 4.1.2. The Nondeterministic Case

In this subsection we consider nondeterministic communication complexity. We show that in the nondeterministic case the complexity of  $(f, g)$  cannot be much smaller than the sum of the complexities. We will concentrate on the measure  $N^1$ , but similar results hold also for the measures  $N^0$  and  $N$ .

Recall the definitions of the  $\mu$ -rectangle size bound,  $B_\mu(f)$ , and of the rectangle size bound,  $B_*^1(f)$  (Definition 2.14). The key tool that we need is the following property of the measure  $B_*^1$ :

**Lemma 4.7:**  $B_*^1(f \wedge g) \geq B_*^1(f) \cdot B_*^1(g)$ .

PROOF: Let  $\mu_f$  be the distribution that gives the maximum for  $B_*^1(f)$  and similarly let  $\mu_g$  be the distribution that gives the maximum for  $B_*^1(g)$ . That is, for every 1-monochromatic rectangle  $R$  of  $f$ ,  $\mu_f(R) \leq 1/B_*^1(f)$  and for every 1-monochromatic rectangle  $R'$  of  $g$ ,  $\mu_g(R') \leq 1/B_*^1(g)$ . Define a distribution  $\mu$  on the 1s of  $f \wedge g$  by:

$$\mu((x_f, x_g), (y_f, y_g)) = \mu_f(x_f, y_f) \cdot \mu_g(x_g, y_g)$$

Note that  $\mu$  is indeed a probability distribution. Now, consider a 1-monochromatic rectangle  $R$  of  $f \wedge g$ . Let  $R_f$  be the projection of  $R$  on  $f$ 's input. That is,

$$R_f = \{(x_f, y_f) : \exists (x_g, y_g) \text{ such that } ((x_f, x_g), (y_f, y_g)) \in R\}.$$

Similarly, let  $R_g$  be defined as

$$R_g = \{(x_g, y_g) : \exists (x_f, y_f) \text{ such that } ((x_f, x_g), (y_f, y_g)) \in R\}.$$

Because  $R$  is a rectangle, then so are  $R_f$  and  $R_g$ . Moreover, because  $R$  is 1-monochromatic with respect to  $f \wedge g$ , then so are  $R_f$  with respect to  $f$  and  $R_g$  with respect to  $g$ . Also,  $R \subseteq R_f \times R_g$  and hence  $\mu(R) \leq \mu(R_f \times R_g)$ . By the definition of  $\mu$ ,  $\mu(R_f \times R_g)$  is equal to  $\mu_f(R_f) \cdot \mu_g(R_g)$ , which is at most  $1/(B_*^1(f)B_*^1(g))$ . We have shown that there exists a probability distribution  $\mu$  such that, for every 1-monochromatic rectangle  $R$  of  $f \wedge g$ ,  $\mu(R) \leq 1/(B_*^1(f)B_*^1(g))$ . This implies, by definition, that  $B_*^1(f \wedge g) \geq B_\mu(f \wedge g) \geq B_*^1(f)B_*^1(g)$ .  $\square$

**Exercise 4.8:** Lemma 4.7 only states the property that we need for our purposes. In this exercise we take a more complete view on the measure  $B_*^1$ .

- 1\* Express  $B_*^1$  as a linear program. Use the duality theorem of linear programming to write its *dual* program.

Use the dual program to solve the next two parts of this exercise.

2. Prove that  $B_*^1(f \wedge g) = B_*^1(f)B_*^1(g)$  (that is, Lemma 4.7 holds with equality).
3. Prove that  $\log B_*^1(f) \leq R^{1,\text{pub}}(f) + O(1)$  (recall that  $R^{1,\text{pub}}(f)$  is the complexity of computing  $f$  using a public coin protocol that makes a one-sided error).

**Corollary 4.9:** *For all Boolean functions  $f, g : \{0, 1\}^n \times \{0, 1\}^n \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$ ,*

- $N^1(f \wedge g) \geq N^1(f) + N^1(g) - 2\log n - O(1)$ .
- $N^1(\wedge_{j=1}^\ell f) \geq \ell(N^1(f) - \log n - O(1))$ .

PROOF: Combining Proposition 2.15, Theorem 2.16, and Lemma 4.7 we get:

$$\begin{aligned} N^1(f \wedge g) &\geq \log B_*^1(f \wedge g) \geq \log B_*^1(f) + \log B_*^1(g) \\ &\geq N^1(f) + N^1(g) - 2\log n - O(1). \end{aligned}$$

Similarly,

$$\begin{aligned} N^1(\wedge_{j=1}^\ell f) &\geq \log B_*^1(\wedge_{j=1}^\ell f) \geq \log(B_*^1(f))^\ell \\ &= \ell \log B_*^1(f) \geq \ell(N^1(f) - \log n - O(1)), \end{aligned}$$

as desired.  $\square$

- **Example 4.10:** Consider the NE function. We know that  $N^1(\text{NE}) = \log n + 1$  (Example 2.17). By Example 2.17,  $B_*^1(\text{NE}) \leq 4$  (alternatively, recall that  $R^{1,\text{pub}}(\text{NE}) = O(1)$  (Example 3.13) and use Exercise 4.8). By Exercise 4.8,  $B_*^1(\wedge_{j=1}^\ell \text{NE}) \leq 4^\ell$ , which implies, by Theorem 2.16,  $N^1(\wedge_{j=1}^\ell \text{NE}) = O(\ell + \log n)$  (compared to  $\ell \cdot N^1(\text{NE}) = O(\ell \log n)$ ). Therefore, the  $O(\log n)$  term in Corollary 4.9 is necessary.

### 4.1.3. The Deterministic Case

In the previous subsections, we showed that for some functions  $f$ , the randomized communication complexity of  $f^\ell$  or the nondeterministic communication complexity of  $f^\ell$  may be smaller than  $\ell$  times the corresponding complexity of  $f$ , but that the gap in the case of nondeterministic communication complexity cannot be too large. In order to prove a similar result for the deterministic case we need, for some function  $f$ , to prove an upper bound on  $D(f^\ell)$  and to prove a lower bound on  $D(f)$ . Some bounds on the gap can be obtained by results we have already seen.

**Exercise 4.11:** Prove that for all Boolean functions  $f$ ,

$$D(f^\ell) = \Omega(\ell(\sqrt{D(f)} - \log n - O(1))).$$

Hint: Use Corollary 4.9 to prove that  $N(f^\ell) \geq \ell(N(f) - \log n - O(1))$ . Then, use the connection between nondeterministic communication complexity and deterministic communication complexity.

Let us consider what techniques might be used to obtain such a gap. What was shown in Section 4.1.2 is that if the lower bound on  $D(f)$  was proved using the rectangle size bound,  $B_*^1(f)$ , then because

$$\begin{aligned} D(f^\ell) &\geq D(\wedge_{j=1}^\ell f) \geq N^1(\wedge_{j=1}^\ell f) \geq \log B_*^1(\wedge_{j=1}^\ell f) \geq \log (B_*^1(f))^\ell \\ &= \ell \log (B_*^1(f)) \end{aligned}$$

any protocol for  $D(f^\ell)$  has complexity that is  $\ell$  times the lower bound for  $D(f)$ . The same reasoning excludes using the rectangle size bound on the 0-rectangles.

The second lower bound technique we have for proving lower bounds on  $D(f)$  is by using the rank of  $M_f$  (see Sections 1.4 and 2.5). However, the following exercise shows that if the lower bound for  $D(f)$  is proved using the rank method then, again,  $D(f^\ell)$  is at least  $\ell$  times larger than this lower bound.

**Exercise 4.12:** Show that  $\text{rank}(f \wedge g) = \text{rank}(f)\text{rank}(g)$ . Hint: Use the Kronecker product.

The following example shows how to use Exercise 4.12 to analyze the rank of certain matrices.

► **Example 4.13:** A convenient way to view the function LNE (Example 4.4) is by writing  $\text{LNE}_{\ell,k}(x, y) = \wedge_{j=1}^\ell \text{NE}(x^j, y^j)$ . With this view, it follows from Exercise 4.12 that  $\text{rank}(\text{LNE}) = (\text{rank}(\text{NE}))^\ell$ . Because  $M_{\text{NE}}$  has full rank,  $\text{rank}(\text{LNE}) = (2^k)^\ell = 2^n$ , which implies  $D(\text{LNE}) \geq n$ . Now, consider the nondeterministic communication complexity of LNE. Clearly,  $N^0(\text{LNE}) = O(\log \ell + k)$ , because Alice can “guess” the index  $j$  for which  $x^j = y^j$  and send Bob the value  $j$  and  $x^j$ . Also,  $N^1(\text{LNE}) = O(\ell \log k)$ , because Alice can “guess” for each  $j$  an index  $i$  such that  $x_i^j \neq y_i^j$  and send Bob the list of indices and the values of the corresponding bits. In fact, by Example 4.5,  $N^1(\text{LNE}) \leq R^1(\text{LNE}) = O(\ell + \log k)$ . If, for example,  $\ell = k = \sqrt{n}$ , then  $N^0(\text{LNE}) = N^1(\text{LNE}) = O(\sqrt{n})$ , which, due to Theorem 2.11, are both optimal.

**Exercise 4.14:** Show that  $D(\text{Eq}^\ell) \geq \ell \cdot n$  (prove it once using a fooling set argument and again using Exercise 4.12).

The next application of Exercise 4.12 shows that the rank lower bound on  $D(f)$  (Section 1.4) is always better (ignoring constants) than the fooling set lower bound (Section 1.3).

**Lemma 4.15:** Let  $f$  be a Boolean function and let  $A$  be a fooling set for  $f$ . Then,  $|A| \leq (\text{rank}(f) + 1)^2$ .

PROOF: It is enough to prove that if  $A$  is a 1-fooling set, then  $|A| \leq (\text{rank}(f))^2$ . The proof for 0-fooling sets can then be done by going through the function  $\text{not}(f)$  whose matrix has a rank of at most  $\text{rank}(f) + 1$ . Let  $(x^{(1)}, y^{(1)}), \dots, (x^{(r)}, y^{(r)})$  be the elements of  $A$ . Define a new function  $g(x, y) = f(y, x)$ . Obviously,  $\text{rank}(f) = \text{rank}(g)$ .

Consider the function  $f \wedge g$ . By Exercise 4.12,

$$\text{rank}(f \wedge g) = \text{rank}(f) \cdot \text{rank}(g) = (\text{rank}(f))^2.$$

Hence, it is enough to prove that  $\text{rank}(f \wedge g) \geq |A|$ . For this, it is enough to prove that  $M_{f \wedge g}$  contains as a submatrix the identity matrix of order  $r = |A|$ . Consider the set  $S$  of the rows  $(x^{(i)}, y^{(i)})$  ( $1 \leq i \leq r$ ) and the set  $T$  of the columns  $(y^{(i)}, x^{(j)})$  ( $1 \leq i, j \leq r$ ). To see that the submatrix  $S \times T$  is the identity matrix, note that the  $(i, j)$  entry in this submatrix is

$$\begin{aligned} (f \wedge g)[(x^{(i)}, y^{(i)}), (y^{(j)}, x^{(j)})] &= f(x^{(i)}, y^{(j)}) \cdot g(y^{(i)}, x^{(j)}) \\ &= f(x^{(i)}, y^{(j)}) \cdot f(x^{(j)}, y^{(i)}). \end{aligned}$$

If  $i = j$ , then this value equals 1 because  $f(x^{(i)}, y^{(i)}) = 1$  (because  $(x^{(i)}, y^{(i)})$  is an element of  $A$ ). On the other hand, if  $i \neq j$ , then this value equals 0 because at least one of  $f(x^{(i)}, y^{(j)})$  and  $f(x^{(j)}, y^{(i)})$  is 0 (because  $A$  is a fooling set).  $\square$

Observe that both Lemma 4.15 and Exercise 4.12 hold in any field. This is used in the following example:

- **Example 4.16:** Consider the function IP. We proved that  $\text{rank}(M_{\text{IP}}) = 2^n - 1$  (Example 1.29) and hence  $D(\text{IP}) \geq n$ . On the other hand, in Exercise 2.23 it is shown that over  $GF(2)$  the rank is only  $\text{rank}_{GF(2)}(M_{\text{IP}}) = n$ . This implies, using the above lemma, that the size of a fooling set for the IP function is at most  $(n + 1)^2$ . Hence, in this case, the rank method gives an exponentially better lower bound than the bound given by the fooling set method.

## 4.2. Rounds

In the definition of communication complexity Alice and Bob alternate sending messages to each other. This is satisfactory as long as we are interested only in the number of bits exchanged. We may ask how much *interaction* is really necessary to obtain a low communication protocol. For example, maybe it always suffices for Alice to send one message (containing several bits) to Bob and then Bob can compute the answer by himself. We start by discussing one-round communication, where no interaction takes place; then, we consider protocols with limited interaction.

**Definition 4.17:** A one-round protocol is a protocol where Alice sends a message to Bob, and then Bob sends the output. The one-round communication complexity of  $f$ , denoted  $D^1(f)$ , is the cost of the best one-round protocol for  $f$ . We use  $D^{1,Bob}$  to denote the cost of one-round protocols in which Bob sends the first message. We use similar notation for randomized complexity ( $R^1(f)$ ) and so forth.

The one-round deterministic communication complexity of a function is quite easy to characterize.

**Exercise 4.18:** Prove that  $D^1(f) = \log_2 t + 1$ , where  $t$  is the number of different rows in the matrix  $M_f$  associated with  $f$ .

► **Example 4.19:** Let  $\text{INDEX}(x, i)$  denote the function where Bob gets an integer  $1 \leq i \leq n$ , and Alice gets a vector  $x \in \{0, 1\}^n$ , and the output is the bit  $x_i$ . The previous exercise implies that  $D^1(f) = n + 1$ , while  $D^{1,\text{Bob}}(f) = \log_2 n + 1$ .

**Exercise 4.20:** Prove that  $R^1(\text{INDEX}) = \Theta(n)$  and that  $R^{1,\text{Bob}}(\text{INDEX}) = \Theta(\log n)$ .

We see that for both deterministic and randomized protocols, there may be an exponential gap between 1-round communication complexity and unrestricted communication complexity (or even between the 1-round complexities with different players starting). The next exercise claims that this is the largest gap possible for deterministic and randomized protocols. In contrast, for nondeterministic protocols there is no difference between 1-round and an arbitrary number of rounds (see Section 2.1).

**Exercise 4.21:** Show that  $D(f) \geq \log_2 D^1(f)$  and also  $R(f) \geq \log_2 R^1(f)$ .

**Exercise 4.22:** We can consider an even more restricted type of protocols that are called *simultaneous* protocols. In this kind of protocol, Alice and Bob each send a single message (depending only on his own input) to a referee, who, based on these two messages, computes the value  $f(x, y)$ . Denote by  $D^{\parallel}(f)$  the deterministic communication complexity of computing the function  $f$  using simultaneous protocols and  $R^{\parallel}(f)$  the randomized communication complexity of computing the function  $f$  using simultaneous protocols. Let  $f: \{0, 1\}^n \times \{0, 1\}^n \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$  be any function.

1. Prove that  $D^{\parallel}(f) = D^1(f) + D^{1,\text{Bob}}(f)$ .
2. Prove that  $R^{\parallel}(f) = O(\sqrt{n} \cdot R^{\parallel,\text{pub}}(f))$ . Hint: Simulate the public coin protocol, for many different values of the coins. See also the proof of Theorem 3.14.
3. Prove that  $D^{\parallel}(f) = O(R^{\parallel}(f)^2)$ . Hint: First, reduce the probability of error by repeating the randomized protocol  $O(R^{\parallel}(f))$  times. Then, choose a specific random string for a deterministic simulation.
4. Determine  $R^{\parallel}(\text{EQ})$ .

We now turn our attention to the case of limited interaction:

**Definition 4.23:** A  $k$ -round protocol is a protocol where on every input there are at most  $k$  alternations between bits sent by Alice and bits sent by Bob. For example, a two-round protocol is a protocol where Alice sends a message to Bob; Bob sends a message to Alice; and then Alice sends the output.

The  $k$ -round communication complexity of  $f$ , denoted  $D^k(f)$ , is the cost of the best  $k$ -round protocol for  $f$ , where Alice sends the first message. We use  $D^{k,\text{Bob}}$  to denote the cost of  $k$ -round protocols where Bob sends the first message. We use similar notation for randomized complexity ( $R^k(f)$ ), distributional complexity ( $D_{\varepsilon}^{k,k}(f)$ ), and so forth.

It turns out that for any  $k$ , there are cases where restricting the number of rounds to  $k$  increases the communication complexity exponentially relative to even  $k + 1$ -round protocols. Proving such gaps for a certain function  $g$  consists of two parts: an upper bound on the  $k + 1$ -round complexity of  $g$ , and a lower bound on its  $k$ -round complexity. The general technique used to prove such lower bounds proceeds by transforming any  $k$ -round protocol for  $g$  into a  $k - 1$ -round protocol for some “restricted” case  $f$  of  $g$ , which by induction is known not to have efficient  $k - 1$ -round protocols. The base case for this induction is one-round protocols, which, as we saw, are typically easier to handle. A transformation as described above can be done by arguing that the first message sent in the  $k$ -round protocol (for  $g$ ) could not have conveyed too much information about  $f$ , and thus in the converted  $k - 1$ -round protocol, the parties will simply skip the first round of communication. A general scenario where this can be done is given in Theorem 4.26.

**Definition 4.24:** Let  $f(x, y)$  be a Boolean function on domain  $X \times Y$ . The two-party communication problem  $f^{*m}$  is as follows: Alice gets  $m$  strings  $x_1, \dots, x_m \in X$ ; Bob gets an integer  $i \in \{1, \dots, m\}$  and a string  $y \in Y$ . Their aim is to compute  $f(x_i, y)$ .

**Exercise 4.25:** Recall the definition of  $f^m$  (Section 4.1). Prove that, for all  $k$  and  $m$ ,  $D^k(f) \leq D^k(f^{*m}) \leq D^k(f^m) \leq m \cdot D^k(f)$ .

Consider a  $k$ -round protocol for computing  $f^{*m}$ . Intuitively, since Alice does not know  $i$ , she cannot know which  $x_i$  to speak about in her first message – and as long as she sends  $o(m)$  bits in this message, she gives very little information on the right  $x_i$ . Thus, her first message can be skipped. This can be proven in the most clean and general way for public coin, randomized protocols. All randomized protocols in this section are in the public coin model, but for brevity we will simply use  $R^k$  instead of  $R^{k, pub}$ .

**Theorem 4.26:** Let  $f$  be any function. Then,

$$R^k(f^{*m}) \geq \min \left\{ \frac{m}{100 \log m}, \frac{R^{k-1, Bob}(f)}{10 \log m} \right\}.$$

In the proof of this theorem we will go back and forth between randomized and distributional complexities. We should observe that just like in the proof of Theorem 3.20, the  $k$ -round randomized complexity is exactly equal to the maximum over all distributions of the distributional  $k$ -round complexity (the same proof works).

We use the following notation: For a distribution  $D$  on a set  $X$ , denote by  $D^m$  the distribution on  $X^m$  obtained by choosing independently for each  $1 \leq i \leq m$ , an element  $x_i \in X$  according to the distribution  $D$ . For a set  $S$ , denote the density of  $S$  according to the distribution  $D$  (that is  $\Pr[x \in S]$  if  $x$  is chosen according to  $D$ ) by  $\Pr_D[S]$ . If  $D$  is a joint distribution on  $X_1 \times X_2$ , we denote the conditional probability of event  $E$  given a fixed choice of  $x_1$  by  $\Pr_D[E|x_1]$ .

**Definition 4.27:** Let  $D$  be a distribution on  $X$ , let  $S \subseteq X^m$  and let  $i$  ( $1 \leq i \leq m$ ) be an index. The index  $i$  is free in  $S$  (relative to  $D$ ) if there exist  $x_1, \dots, x_{i-1} \in X$  and a set  $G \subseteq X$  such that

1.  $\Pr_D[G] \geq 0.9$ .
2. For every  $g \in G$  there exists  $x_{i+1}, \dots, x_m$  such that  $\langle x_1, \dots, x_{i-1}, g, x_{i+1}, \dots, x_m \rangle \in S$ .

Intuitively,  $i$  is free in  $S$  if  $S$  has little information on  $x_i$ , even given  $x_1, \dots, x_{i-1}$ . The following lemma states that if  $S$  is large, then it must have little information on one of the indices.

**Lemma 4.28:** Let  $D$  be any distribution on  $X$ , and let  $S \subseteq X^m$  such that for all  $1 \leq i \leq m$ ,  $i$  is not free in  $S$ , then  $\Pr_{D^m}[S] < 0.9^m$ .

PROOF: The proof is by induction on  $m$ . For  $m = 1$ , since 1 is not free in  $S$ , then  $\Pr_D[S] < 0.9$  (otherwise,  $S$  itself can serve as the set  $G$  in the definition). Assume the lemma holds for  $m - 1$ , and prove it for  $m$ : Let  $A$  be the set of all  $x_1 \in X$  that have an extension in  $S$ . Since 1 is not free in  $S$ ,  $\Pr_D[A] < 0.9$ . For every  $x \in A$  define  $S_x = \{\langle x_2, \dots, x_m \rangle | \langle x, x_2, \dots, x_m \rangle \in S\}$ . By the definition of  $D^m$ ,

$$\Pr_{D^m}[S] = \sum_{x \in A} \Pr_D[x] \Pr_{D^{m-1}}[S_x].$$

By the fact that  $S$  has no free index, it follows that for all  $x \in A$ , the set  $S_x$  has no free index. By the induction hypothesis,  $\Pr_{D^{m-1}}[S_x] < 0.9^{m-1}$ . Thus

$$\Pr_{D^m}[S] < \Pr_D[A] \cdot 0.9^{m-1} < 0.9^m,$$

as needed. □

PROOF (OF THEOREM 4.26): Let  $\mathcal{P}$  be a  $k$ -round randomized protocol for  $f^{*m}$  that achieves  $R^k(f^{*m})$ . We first reduce the probability of error of the protocol  $\mathcal{P}$  for  $f^{*m}$  (by using Exercise 3.4) to  $\frac{1}{40m}$ . This results in a new protocol  $\mathcal{P}'$  whose communication complexity is larger by at most a factor of  $10 \log m$  than the communication complexity of  $\mathcal{P}$ . Hence, if  $\mathcal{P}'$  has communication complexity of more than  $m/10$ , then the complexity of  $\mathcal{P}$  is at least  $m/(100 \log m)$  and we are done. Assume that this is not the case; that is, at most  $m/10$  bits are exchanged by  $\mathcal{P}'$ .

For any distribution  $D$  on  $X \times Y$  we will construct a deterministic  $k - 1$ -round protocol for  $f$  that errs on at most  $\varepsilon = 0.15$  of the inputs weighted according to the distribution  $D$ . The number of bits exchanged by the protocol will be the same as the number of bits exchanged in  $\mathcal{P}'$ . Since we do this for all  $D$ , a randomized protocol for  $f$  follows as in Theorem 3.20, and the theorem follows.

Define a distribution  $D^*$  on  $X^m \times Y \times \{1, \dots, m\}$  of inputs for  $f^{*m}$  as follows: Choose (independently)  $m$  pairs  $(x_j, y_j)$  according to the distribution  $D$ , and an index  $i$  uniformly at random in  $\{1, \dots, m\}$ . Set  $y = y_i$  (and throw away all other  $y_j$ 's). Let  $\mathcal{P}^*$  be a deterministic protocol for  $f^{*m}$  that errs on a fraction of at most  $\frac{1}{40m}$  of the input weighted by the distribution  $D^*$  (such a protocol is obtained from  $\mathcal{P}'$  using Theorem 3.20, and its communication complexity is the same).

**Claim 4.29:** *There exists a set  $S \subseteq X^m$  such that*

1. *For all  $\langle x_1, \dots, x_m \rangle \in S$  Alice's first message in  $\mathcal{P}^*$  is the same, call it  $\alpha$ .*
2.  $\Pr_{D^m}[S] > 0.9^m$ .
3. *For all  $\langle x_1, \dots, x_m \rangle \in S : \Pr_{D^*}[\mathcal{P}^* \text{ errs} \mid \langle x_1, \dots, x_m \rangle] \leq \frac{1}{20m}$ .*

PROOF (OF CLAIM 4.29): Consider the set  $T$  of  $\langle x_1, \dots, x_m \rangle \in X^m$  that satisfy

$$\Pr_{D^*}[\mathcal{P}^* \text{ errs} \mid \langle x_1, \dots, x_m \rangle] \leq \frac{1}{20m}.$$

Using the Markov inequality we see that  $\Pr_{D^m}[T] \geq \frac{1}{2}$  (the distribution  $D^*$  induced on  $X^m$  is simply  $D^m$ ). Since the first message contains at most  $\frac{m}{10}$  bits it partitions  $T$  into at most  $2^{\frac{m}{10}}$  sets. Let  $S$  be the subset of  $T$  that has maximum weight, its weight is at least  $\Pr_{D^m}[S] \geq \frac{\Pr_{D^m}[T]}{2^{m/10}} > 0.9^m$ .  $\square$

We now proceed with the proof of the theorem. Let  $S$  be the set guaranteed by Claim 4.29, let  $i$  be a free index in  $S$  as guaranteed by Lemma 4.28, and let  $x_1, \dots, x_{i-1}$  and  $G$  be as guaranteed by the definition of  $i$  being free. Following is a  $k - 1$ -round protocol for  $f$  on input  $(x, y)$ :

- Alice, given  $x$ , constructs an input for  $\mathcal{P}^*$  as follows: If  $x \in G$ , then she picks a sequence  $\langle x_1, \dots, x_m \rangle \in S$  that starts with  $x_1, \dots, x_{i-1}, x$ . Such a sequence exists by the definition of  $i$  being free. If  $x \notin G$ , then Alice picks an arbitrary sequence.
- Bob, given  $y$ , takes  $(y, i)$  as his input for  $\mathcal{P}^*$ , where  $i$  is the free index in  $S$ .
- The two players run the protocol  $\mathcal{P}^*$ , but skip the first round of communication, instead assuming that the first message sent is  $\alpha$ .

The number of bits exchanged in the above protocol is exactly as in  $\mathcal{P}^*$  (and  $\mathcal{P}'$ ). That is,  $10 \log m \cdot R^k(f^{**m})$ . It remains to show that this protocol errs in computing  $f$  with probability at most 0.15 when  $(x, y)$  is chosen according to the distribution  $D$ . Let us call the distribution on  $X^m \times Y \times \{1, \dots, m\}$  induced by  $D$ , in the above construction,  $D'$ . The probability that our protocol errs when  $(x, y)$  is chosen according to  $D$  is given by

$$\Pr_{D'}[\mathcal{P}^* \text{ errs}] \leq \Pr_D[x \notin G] + \Pr_{D'}[\mathcal{P}^* \text{ errs} \mid x \in G].$$

The first term is bounded from above by  $\frac{1}{10}$  (by the definition of  $G$ ). To bound the second term we observe that for any  $x \in G$ , the sequence  $x_1, \dots, x_m$  is in  $S$ , and thus satisfies (by the definition of  $S$ ):

$$\Pr_{D^*}[\mathcal{P}^* \text{ errs} \mid \langle x_1, \dots, x_m \rangle] \leq \frac{1}{20m}$$

Now notice that the distribution  $D'$  conditioned on  $x_1, \dots, x_m$  is very similar to the distribution  $D^*$  under the same conditioning. The only difference is that in  $D^*$ ,  $i$  is

chosen at random, whereas in  $D'$  it is fixed deterministically (in both cases  $y$  is chosen such that  $(x_i, y)$  is distributed according to  $D$ ). Thus,

$$\begin{aligned}\Pr_{D'}[\mathcal{P}^* \text{ errs } | \langle x_1, \dots, x_m \rangle] &= \Pr_{D^*}[\mathcal{P}^* \text{ errs } | \langle x_1, \dots, x_m \rangle \text{ and } i] \\ &\leq m \Pr_{D^*}[\mathcal{P}^* \text{ errs } | \langle x_1, \dots, x_m \rangle] \\ &\leq \frac{1}{20},\end{aligned}$$

where the first inequality uses the fact that in  $D^*$  the index  $i$  is distributed uniformly. Thus the total probability of error is at most  $\frac{1}{10} + \frac{1}{20} = 0.15$ , which completes the proof of the theorem.  $\square$

► **Example 4.30:** For any  $k$  define the tree problem,  $T_k$ , as follows: Consider the complete  $n$ -ary tree of depth  $k$ . A *labeling* of the tree assigns to each leaf a bit, and to each internal node a number in  $\{1, \dots, n\}$ . An input to the tree problem is a particular labeling of the tree, where Bob gets as his input the labels of all nodes in odd levels (where the root is level 1), and Alice gets as her input all the labels of nodes in even levels. The labels of the internal nodes define in a natural way a path from the root to a leaf (the label of each internal node is viewed as a pointer to one of its children), and the output of  $T_k$  on this labeling is the label of the leaf reached by this path. Note that the input size  $N$  is  $\Theta(n^k)$ .

A  $k$ -round protocol for  $T_k$ , with Bob starting, proceeds by the parties simply following the path together, and each party sending the label of the node just reached. Thus  $R^{k, \text{Bob}}(T_k) \leq D^{k, \text{Bob}}(T_k) \leq k \log n$ . On the other hand, to get a lower bound for the  $k$ -round complexity where Alice speaks first, notice that  $T_k$  is, by definition, exactly  $(T_{k-1})^{*n}$  (with the roles of Alice and Bob in  $T_{k-1}$  reversed). We get  $R^1(T_1) = \Omega(n)$  from Exercise 4.20 and thus by induction, using Theorem 4.26, we get that  $D^k(T_k) \geq R^k(T_k) = \Omega(n/\log^{k-1} n)$ .

**Exercise 4.31:** For any  $k$  define the pointer jumping function,  $PJ_k$ , as follows: The input is a  $2n$ -vertex directed graph of out-degree 1. Bob holds the outgoing edges from vertices  $1, \dots, n$  of the graph, and Alice holds the outgoing edges from vertices  $n+1, \dots, 2n$  (that is  $\Theta(n \log n)$  bits each). The value of  $PJ_k$  is the least significant bit of the  $k$ -th vertex reached by following the path starting at vertex 1. Use a reduction from  $T_k$  to show that  $R^k(PJ_k) = \Omega(n^{1/k}/\log^{k-1} n)$ . In contrast, note that  $D^{k, \text{Bob}}(PJ_k) \leq k \log n$ .

**Exercise 4.32:** Show that  $R^k(PJ_k) \leq R^{k-1, \text{Bob}}(PJ_k) = O(\frac{n \log n}{k})$ .

### 4.3. Asymmetric Communication

All our treatment of communication complexity so far has only counted the *total* number of bits exchanged during the execution of the protocol. We have not made a distinction between the number of bits sent by Alice and the number of bits sent by Bob. This distinction is important in certain applications and is particularly natural to consider in cases where one of the players has a much larger input size than the other.

**Definition 4.33:** A  $[k, \ell]$ -protocol is a protocol where on every input  $(x, y)$  Alice sends a total of at most  $k$  bits and Bob sends a total of at most  $\ell$  bits.

**Exercise 4.34:** Prove that each of the functions  $\text{EQ}$ ,  $\text{GT}$ ,  $\text{IP}$ , and  $\text{DISJ}$  has an  $[\frac{n}{2} + 1, \frac{n}{2} + 1]$ -protocol. In contrast, prove that for some constant  $c$ , most functions  $f: \{0, 1\}^n \times \{0, 1\}^n \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$  do not have an  $[n - c \log n, n - c \log n]$ -protocol.

Consider the lower bound techniques we have seen so far. The reader can verify that both the rank method and the rectangle size method (and its special case – the fooling set method) are not sufficient to distinguish between bits sent by Bob and those sent by Alice. The round-by-round technique (Section 4.2) can naturally be applied while preserving this distinction but usually gives rather weak lower bounds. What we show here is that an extension of the rectangle size technique, which takes into account the lengths and widths of the rectangles (and not only their sizes), leads to better bounds.

**Definition 4.35:** A function  $f$  is  $(u, v)$ -rich if at least  $v$  of the columns of the matrix  $M_f$  contain at least  $u$  1-entries each.

In Figure 4.1, a  $(6, 5)$ -rich function is exhibited (the 5 “rich” columns are the 1st, 2nd, 4th, 7th, and 8th). Note that the definition of richness is asymmetric in the sense that rows and columns play different roles. This allows giving different costs to bits sent by Alice and bits sent by Bob. Definition 4.35 is formulated in a way that is appropriate in cases where Bob has a larger input than Alice. The next lemma shows how to use it.

**Lemma 4.36:** Let  $f$  be  $(u, v)$ -rich. If  $f$  has an  $[a, b]$ -protocol, then  $f$  contains a 1-monochromatic rectangle of dimensions at least  $u/2^a \times v/2^{a+b}$ .

**PROOF:** The proof is by induction on  $a + b$ . If  $a + b = 0$ , no communication takes place, hence  $f$  must be constant. Since  $f$  is  $(u, v)$ -rich, it follows that  $f(x, y) = 1$  for all  $(x, y)$  and that its matrix  $M_f = A \times B$  satisfies  $|A| \geq u$  and  $|B| \geq v$ .

|   |   |   |   |   |   |   |   |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| 1 | 0 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 1 |
| 1 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 0 |
| 0 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 1 |
| 1 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 1 | 1 |
| 1 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 1 | 0 |
| 1 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 1 |
| 0 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 1 |
| 1 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 1 |

**Figure 4.1:** A  $(6, 5)$ -rich function

For the induction step, consider two cases depending on the player that sends the first bit in the protocol. Assume first that Bob sends the first bit. Let  $B_0$  be the inputs for which he sends 0, and  $B_1$  be the inputs for which he sends 1. Let  $f_0$  be the restriction of  $f$  to  $A \times B_0$  and let  $f_1$  be the restriction of  $f$  to  $A \times B_1$ . Note that either  $f_0$  or  $f_1$  is  $(u, v/2)$ -rich (because each of the  $v$  columns guaranteed by  $f$  being  $(u, v)$ -rich belongs to either  $B_0$  or  $B_1$ ) and that both functions have an  $[a, b-1]$ -protocol. Therefore, either  $f_0$  or  $f_1$  contains, by the induction hypothesis, a 1-monochromatic rectangle of dimensions

$$\frac{u}{2^a} \times \frac{v/2}{2^{a+b-1}} = \frac{u}{2^a} \times \frac{v}{2^{a+b}},$$

as needed.

The second case is where Alice sends the first bit in the protocol. Let  $A_0$ ,  $A_1$ ,  $f_0$ , and  $f_1$  be defined analogously. A simple averaging argument shows that either  $f_0$  or  $f_1$  is  $(u/2, v/2)$ -rich (because each of the  $v$  columns guaranteed by  $f$  being  $(u, v)$ -rich has at least  $u/2$  of its 1-entries in either  $A_0$  or  $A_1$ ). Also, both  $f_0$  and  $f_1$  have an  $[a-1, b]$ -protocol, so by the induction hypothesis, either  $f_0$  or  $f_1$  contains a 1-monochromatic rectangle of dimensions at least

$$\frac{u/2}{2^{a-1}} \times \frac{v/2}{2^{a-1+b}} = \frac{u}{2^a} \times \frac{v}{2^{a+b}},$$

as needed.  $\square$

**Exercise 4.37:** Let  $f$  be a  $(u, v)$ -rich function. If  $f$  has an  $[a, b]$ -randomized protocol with one-sided error  $\varepsilon$ , then  $f$  contains a 1-monochromatic rectangle of dimensions at least  $\frac{1-\varepsilon}{2} \frac{u}{2^a} \times \frac{1-\varepsilon}{2} \frac{v}{2^{a+b}}$ . Hint: Fix the random coin tosses of the protocol in an appropriate way. Then, use Lemma 4.36.

► **Example 4.38:** For a vector  $x$  in  $Z_2^n$  and  $y$  a vector subspace of  $Z_2^n$  (that is,  $x$  is given by  $n$  bits and  $y$  by  $n^2$  bits, for example, by specifying a basis of the subspace), let  $\text{SPAN}(x, y)$  be 1 iff  $x$  belongs to the subspace  $y$ . Clearly the problem can be solved by letting Alice send  $n$  bits (her input) to Bob. We show that any attempt to reduce the number of bits she sends essentially implies that Bob needs to send his input (which is much longer). More precisely, in every  $[k, \ell]$ -protocol for  $\text{SPAN}$ , either  $k = \Omega(n)$  or  $\ell = \Omega(n^2)$ . For the proof, assume that  $y$  is of dimension exactly  $n/2$  and is given by its basis. We show that

1.  $\text{SPAN}$  does not contain a  $2^{n/3} \times 2^{n^2/6}$  1-monochromatic rectangle, and
2.  $\text{SPAN}$  is  $(2^{n/2}, 2^{n^2/4})$ -rich.

By Lemma 4.36, the combination of (1) and (2) implies that there is no  $[\frac{n}{6}, \frac{n^2}{12} - \frac{n}{6}]$ -protocol for  $\text{SPAN}$ .

For (1), consider a 1-monochromatic rectangle  $R$  with at least  $2^{n/3}$  rows. Note that any  $2^{n/3}$  vectors span a subspace of  $Z_2^n$  of dimension at least  $n/3$  and that this subspace,  $V$ , is contained in any subspace  $y$  that is a column of the rectangle  $R$ . The number of such  $y$ s (which are subspaces of dimension  $n/2$ ) is bounded from above by the number of ways to choose an additional  $n/6$  basis elements for  $V$ , which is at most  $(2^n)^{n/6} = 2^{n^2/6}$ , as needed.

For (2), notice that every subspace of  $Z_2^n$  of dimension exactly  $n/2$  contains exactly  $2^{n/2}$  vectors and that there are at least  $2^{n^2/4}$  subspaces of dimension  $n/2$ . To see this, we count the number of ways to choose a basis for such a subspace (that is, to choose  $n/2$  independent vectors). There are  $2^n - 1$  possibilities to choose the first basis element (different from  $\vec{0}$ ),  $2^n - 2$  to choose the second,  $2^n - 4$  to choose the third and so forth. Also note that each basis is chosen this way  $\frac{n}{2}!$  times. Hence the number of bases is  $(\prod_{i=0}^{n/2-1} (2^n - 2^i)) / \frac{n}{2}!$ . Each subspace has many bases. By a similar argument, the number of bases for a single subspace is  $(\prod_{i=0}^{n/2-1} (2^{n/2} - 2^i)) / \frac{n}{2}!$ . Hence the total number of subspaces is:

$$\frac{\prod_{i=0}^{n/2-1} (2^n - 2^i)}{\prod_{i=0}^{n/2-1} (2^{n/2} - 2^i)} = \prod_{i=0}^{n/2-1} \frac{2^n - 2^i}{2^{n/2} - 2^i} \geq \prod_{i=0}^{n/2-1} 2^{n/2} = 2^{n^2/4},$$

as needed.

**Exercise 4.39:** Let  $\text{DISJ}_{k,\ell}$  be the disjointness function where Alice's set is of size  $k$  and Bob's set is of size  $\ell$  (both sets are subsets of  $\{1, \dots, n\}$ ). Assume  $k \leq \ell \leq n$ . Prove that there exists a  $[O(k \log \ell), O(k \log n)]$  protocol for  $\text{DISJ}_{k,\ell}$ . Prove also that if there exists an  $[a, b]$ -protocol for  $\text{DISJ}_{k,\ell}$  where  $a = o(k \log \ell)$ , then  $b = \ell^{1-o(1)}$ .

## 4.4. Pseudorandomness

While discussing distributional communication complexity we assumed that inputs for the protocol are chosen according to some arbitrary probability distribution on  $X \times Y$ . It is sometimes beneficial to consider more restricted ways of generating inputs. A particular generation method we will be interested in is by using some (carefully chosen) function  $g$ , which on input  $z$  outputs pairs  $(x, y)$ . Hence, any probability distribution on the  $z$ s induces a probability distribution on  $X \times Y$ .

**Definition 4.40:** A function  $g : \{0, 1\}^m \rightarrow \{0, 1\}^n \times \{0, 1\}^n$  is a pseudorandom generator for communication complexity  $c$  with parameter  $\varepsilon$  if for every two-party deterministic protocol  $\mathcal{P}$  of at most  $c$  bits of communication

$$|\Pr[\mathcal{P}(x, y) \text{ outputs } 1] - \Pr[\mathcal{P}(g(z)) \text{ outputs } 1]| \leq \varepsilon,$$

where  $x$  and  $y$  are chosen uniformly and independently in  $\{0, 1\}^n$ , and  $z$  is chosen uniformly in  $\{0, 1\}^m$ .

Intuitively, this says that there is no way to “distinguish” between truly random inputs and those that are generated by  $g$ , by using only  $c$  bits of communication. For  $m = 2n$  (and any  $c$  and  $\varepsilon$ ) it is trivial to get such a generator (the identity function).

**Exercise 4.41:** Prove that if  $g$  is a pseudorandom generator, then  $m \geq n + c + \log(1 - \varepsilon)$ .

A nearly optimal construction is presented below. For a graph  $H = (V, E)$ , let  $A_H$  be its incidence matrix (that is, an  $n \times n$  matrix where the rows and columns correspond

to the vertices of  $H$ , and the  $(u, v)$  entry of the matrix contains 1 if  $(u, v) \in E$  and 0 otherwise). A parameter of interest is  $\lambda$ , the second largest eigenvalue of the matrix  $A_H$  (its interest comes from the close relation it has with the so-called “expansion” property of  $H$ ). We will use a certain type of graphs, called Ramanujan graphs. These are  $D$ -regular graphs, for which it is known that  $\lambda = \theta(\sqrt{D})$  [Lubotzky, Philips, and Sarnak 1986]. Finally, a standard inequality (see, for example, [Alon and Spencer 1992, page 122]) says that for every  $D$ -regular graph  $H = (V, E)$ , with second largest eigenvalue  $\lambda$ , and for every two subsets of vertices  $S, T \subseteq V$

$$\left| \frac{|E(S, T)|}{|E|} - \frac{|S| |T|}{|V| |V|} \right| \leq \frac{\lambda}{D}, \quad 4.1$$

where  $E(S, T)$  denotes the number of edges with one vertex in  $S$  and the other in  $T$ . We are now ready to present the generator.

**The Generator:** Let  $H = (V, E)$  be a  $D$ -regular ( $D = 2^d$ ) Ramanujan graph with  $N = 2^n$  nodes. The input to the generator  $g$  is a name of a (directed) edge in  $E$ , and the two outputs are the two vertices of the edge. Thus  $g$  accepts an  $m = n + d$  bit string ( $n$  bits to specify a vertex, and  $d$  bits to specify one of its neighbors) and produces two  $n$  bit strings.

**Theorem 4.42:** *The function  $g$  described above is a pseudorandom generator for communication complexity  $c = (d - \log \lambda)/2$ , with parameter  $\varepsilon = 2^{-c}$ .*

**PROOF:** Consider any protocol  $\mathcal{P}$  that uses  $c$  bits of communication. Recall, that such a protocol partitions the inputs into at most  $2^c$  monochromatic rectangles, say  $S_i \times T_i$ . Let  $I$  be the set of these rectangles on which  $\mathcal{P}$  outputs 1. Consider a specific rectangle  $S_i \times T_i$ , for  $i \in I$ . The probability of getting a pair  $(x, y)$  in this rectangle in a truly random choice is exactly  $\frac{|S_i| |T_i|}{|V| |V|}$ . The probability of getting a pair in this rectangle as the output of the generator is the probability of having an edge whose first vertex is in  $S_i$  and the other is in  $T_i$ . That is,  $\frac{|E(S_i, T_i)|}{|E|}$ . Therefore, we get

$$\begin{aligned} & |\Pr[\mathcal{P}(x, y) \text{ outputs } 1] - \Pr[\mathcal{P}(g(z)) \text{ outputs } 1]| \\ &= \left| \sum_{i \in I} \frac{|S_i| |T_i|}{|V| |V|} - \sum_{i \in I} \frac{|E(S_i, T_i)|}{|E|} \right| \\ &\leq \sum_{i \in I} \left| \frac{|S_i| |T_i|}{|V| |V|} - \frac{|E(S_i, T_i)|}{|E|} \right| \\ &\leq 2^c \cdot \frac{\lambda}{D} \end{aligned}$$

(by Equation (4.1)). This, by the choice of  $c$ , is at most  $2^{-c}$ .  $\square$

Note that although the definition requires that  $c$ -bit *deterministic* protocols will not be able to distinguish between truly random inputs and inputs generated by  $g$ , it actually says more. Consider  $c$ -bit *randomized* protocols in the public coin model (where now the probability of a protocol to output 1 is taken also on the random bits). Such protocols can be viewed as a collection of deterministic protocols, by fixing the random input to each

possible value (in fact this is the way Definition 3.12 is formalized). Because the generator is good for *any* deterministic protocol, we get that it is good against such randomized protocols. Obviously, this implies that randomized protocols in the standard (private coin) model cannot distinguish between random inputs and inputs generated by  $g$ .

## 4.5. Reductions and Complexity Classes

It is possible to categorize different communication problems into a “complexity hierarchy” similar to the one known in computational complexity. For this purpose, we consider communication complexity of  $\text{polylog}(n)$  as “efficient”, and for each complexity measure we define a corresponding complexity class. In particular,

$$\begin{aligned} P^{cc} &= \{f : D(f) = \text{polylog}(n)\}, \\ NP^{cc} &= \{f : N^1(f) = \text{polylog}(n)\}, \\ coNP^{cc} &= \{f : N^0(f) = \text{polylog}(n)\}, \\ BPP^{cc} &= \{f : R(f) = \text{polylog}(n)\}, \end{aligned}$$

and

$$RP^{cc} = \{f : R^1(f) = \text{polylog}(n)\}.$$

Formally, for these definitions to make sense,  $f$  is actually a sequence of functions on different input lengths. That is,  $f = \{f_n : \{0, 1\}^n \times \{0, 1\}^n \rightarrow \{0, 1\}\}$ . We emphasize that the correspondence between the names of these complexity classes and the names of computational complexity classes only reflects the view that  $\text{polylog}(n)$  communication is “efficient.” The implications that we get about these communication complexity classes have nothing to do with the corresponding classes in computational complexity. We have already seen various relationships among these classes. For example, Theorem 2.11 says in this terminology that  $P^{cc} = NP^{cc} \cap coNP^{cc}$ . Example 2.5 (the function EQ) shows that  $P^{cc} \neq coNP^{cc}$  and also  $NP^{cc} \neq coNP^{cc}$ . Example 3.5 (again, the function EQ) shows that  $P^{cc} \neq RP^{cc}$  and Example 3.22 (the function DISJ) shows that  $BPP^{cc} \setminus coNP^{cc} \neq \emptyset$ . A natural thing to do is to define notions such as *reducibility* and *completeness*:

**Definition 4.43:** A function  $f$  is reducible to a function  $g$  (denote  $f \leq g$ ) if there exist  $m = \text{polylog}(n)$  and a pair of functions  $h_x : \{0, 1\}^n \rightarrow \{0, 1\}^{2^m}$  and  $h_y : \{0, 1\}^n \rightarrow \{0, 1\}^{2^m}$  such that  $f(x, y) = 1 \Leftrightarrow g(h_x(x), h_y(y)) = 1$ . For a class  $\mathcal{C}$ , the function  $g$  is  $\mathcal{C}$ -complete, if  $g \in \mathcal{C}$  and if every  $f \in \mathcal{C}$  is reducible to  $g$ .

The notions of reducibility and completeness defined above have the same properties that they have in other contexts. For example:

**Exercise 4.44:** (1) Prove that “ $\leq$ ” is a transitive relation. That is, if  $f_1 \leq f_2$  and  $f_2 \leq f_3$ , then  $f_1 \leq f_3$ . (2) Prove that if  $f \leq g$  and  $g \in P^{cc}$ , then also  $f \in P^{cc}$ .

► **Example 4.45:** We show that  $\text{DISJ}$  is  $\text{coNP}^{\text{cc}}$ -complete. Clearly,  $\text{DISJ} \in \text{coNP}^{\text{cc}}$  because  $N^0(\text{DISJ}) = O(\log n)$  (on input  $(x, y)$ , Alice guesses an element of  $x$  that is in the intersection and sends it to Bob, who verifies that this element belongs to  $y$ ). Now let  $f$  be any function in  $\text{coNP}^{\text{cc}}$ . This means that  $N^0(f) = m = \text{polylog}(n)$  or, alternatively, that there is a cover of the 0s of  $f$  using  $2^m$  rectangles. Therefore, we take  $h_x(x)$  to be the set of 0-rectangles that  $x$  belongs to (represented by a  $2^m$ -bit characteristic vector) and similarly  $h_y(y)$  to be the set of 0-rectangles that  $y$  belongs to. Obviously,  $f(x, y) = 0$  iff  $h_x(x)$  and  $h_y(y)$  intersect, or  $f(x, y) = 1$  iff  $\text{DISJ}(h_x(x), h_y(y)) = 1$ .

**Exercise 4.46:** Prove that, for every fixed  $k$ , the tree problem  $T_k$  (Example 4.30) is complete for the class  $C = \{f: D^k, \text{Bob}(f) = \text{polylog}(n)\}$ .

We can further extend the definitions of complexity classes and define the analogs of the polynomial hierarchy: Let  $\sum_0^{\text{cc}}$  be the set of all functions that are 1 on some rectangle  $R$  and 0 otherwise.  $\prod_0^{\text{cc}} = \text{co } \sum_0^{\text{cc}}$ . Now, define

$$\sum_i^{\text{cc}} = \left\{ f \mid f = \bigvee_{j=1}^{2^{\text{polylog}(n)}} f_j, \quad f_j \in \prod_{i-1}^{\text{cc}} \right\}$$

and

$$\prod_i^{\text{cc}} = \left\{ f \mid f = \bigwedge_{j=1}^{2^{\text{polylog}(n)}} f_j, \quad f_j \in \sum_{i-1}^{\text{cc}} \right\}.$$

**Exercise 4.47:** (1) Prove that  $\sum_1^{\text{cc}} = \text{NP}^{\text{cc}}$ . (2) Prove that  $\sum_1^{\text{cc}} \neq \prod_1^{\text{cc}}$ . (3) Prove that  $\text{BPP}^{\text{cc}} \subseteq \sum_2^{\text{cc}} \cap \prod_2^{\text{cc}}$ . (4) Find complete problems for  $\sum_k^{\text{cc}}$  and  $\prod_k^{\text{cc}}$ .

**Open Problem 4.48:** Is  $\sum_2^{\text{cc}} = \prod_2^{\text{cc}}$ ?

## 4.6. The Disjointness Function

In this section we study the *disjointness* function,  $\text{DISJ}$ . We prove a property of this function (Lemma 4.49) that is used (in Example 3.22) to show that the distributional communication complexity of  $\text{DISJ}$ , and hence its randomized communication complexity, is linear. These bounds are very strong and useful (see also, Example 2.19 and Section 5.2). Therefore we provide a detailed proof of this result.

Let  $n = 4\ell - 1$  (for some integer  $\ell$ ). We define a probability distribution  $\mu(x, y)$  by describing an algorithm  $\mathcal{A}$  for producing pairs  $(x, y)$ :

Choose a random partition  $T = (T_1, T_2, \{i\})$  of  $\{1, \dots, n\}$  into three disjoint sets such that  $|T_1| = |T_2| = 2\ell - 1$ . Choose at random sets  $x \subseteq T_1 \cup \{i\}$  and  $y \subseteq T_2 \cup \{i\}$  such that  $|x| = |y| = \ell$ . Output  $(x, y)$ .

Denote

$$A = \{(x, y) : \mu(x, y) > 0 \text{ and } x \cap y = \emptyset\}$$

and

$$B = \{(x, y) : \mu(x, y) > 0 \text{ and } x \cap y \neq \emptyset\}.$$

Note that if  $(x, y) \in B$  then  $x \cap y = \{i\}$  (in particular,  $|x \cap y| = 1$ ). It is convenient to think of  $\mu$  in the above manner although it can be noted, by a symmetry argument, that  $A$  is simply all pairs  $(x, y)$  such that  $|x| = |y| = \ell$  and the intersection is empty (each such pair with the same probability) and similarly  $B$  is all pairs  $(x, y)$  such that  $|x| = |y| = \ell$  and the intersection is of size 1 (again, each such pair with the same probability). We will prove the following lemma:

**Lemma 4.49:** *Let  $A, B$  and  $\mu$  be as above. Let  $R = C \times D$  be any rectangle. Then,  $\mu(B \cap R) \geq \alpha \cdot \mu(A \cap R) - 2^{-\delta n}$ , for some constants  $\alpha, \delta > 0$ .*

In other words, in any rectangle the weight of  $B$ -elements is at least some linear function of the weight of  $A$ -elements. Clearly, there are rectangles containing only  $A$ -elements and no  $B$ -elements, but the lemma says that these rectangles must be “small” (that is, of weight at most  $2^{-\delta n}/\alpha$ ). For a given partition  $T = (T_1, T_2, \{i\})$ , we define

$$\begin{array}{ll} \text{Row}(T) = \Pr[x \in C \mid T] & \text{Col}(T) = \Pr[y \in D \mid T] \\ \text{Row}_0(T) = \Pr[x \in C \mid T, i \notin x] & \text{Col}_0(T) = \Pr[y \in D \mid T, i \notin y] \\ \text{Row}_1(T) = \Pr[x \in C \mid T, i \in x] & \text{Col}_1(T) = \Pr[y \in D \mid T, i \in y] \end{array}$$

where the probabilities are those induced by the algorithm  $\mathcal{A}$ . The following are basic observations:

1.  $\Pr[i \in x \mid T] = \ell/2\ell = 1/2$ . Therefore, for any partition  $T$  the probability of getting  $(x, y)$  that are not disjoint is simply  $\Pr[i \in x \mid T] \cdot \Pr[i \in y \mid T] = 1/4$ . Hence,  $\mu(B) = \Pr[(x, y) \in B] = 1/4$ .
2. Since  $\Pr[i \in x \mid T] = 1/2$  we also get  $\text{Row}(T) = (\text{Row}_0(T) + \text{Row}_1(T))/2$  and similarly  $\text{Col}(T) = (\text{Col}_0(T) + \text{Col}_1(T))/2$ .
3. Let  $T = (T_1, T_2, \{i\})$  and  $T' = (T'_1, T'_2, \{i'\})$  be two partitions such that  $T_2 = T'_2$ . Then,  $\text{Col}_0(T) = \text{Col}_0(T')$  and  $\text{Row}(T) = \text{Row}(T')$  (because in such a case  $T_1 \cup \{i\} = T'_1 \cup \{i'\}$ ). Similarly, if  $T$  and  $T'$  are such that  $T_1 = T'_1$ , then  $\text{Row}_0(T) = \text{Row}_0(T')$  and  $\text{Col}(T) = \text{Col}(T')$ .
4. For all  $T_2$ ,  $E[\text{Row}_0(T) \mid T_2] = E[\text{Row}(T) \mid T_2]$  (where the expectation is taken uniformly over all partitions  $T$  with the given  $T_2$ ). Note that for a specific  $T$  we may have  $\text{Row}_0(T) \neq \text{Row}(T)$  but here we take the average over all partitions  $T$  with the same  $T_2$ . The reason for the above equality is that we get the same distribution of  $x$ s if we choose  $x$  at random in  $\{1, \dots, n\} \setminus T_2$  or if we first choose  $i \notin T_2$  at random and then choose  $x$  at random in  $\{1, \dots, n\} \setminus (T_2 \cup \{i\})$ . In particular, in both cases we have the same probability to get  $x \in C$ .

We need a few more definitions. We say that a partition  $T$  is *x-bad* if  $\text{Row}_1(T) < \text{Row}_0(T)/3 - 2^{-\delta n}$  and is *y-bad* if  $\text{Col}_1(T) < \text{Col}_0(T)/3 - 2^{-\delta n}$ . We say that  $T$  is *bad* if it is either *x-bad* or *y-bad*. Let  $\text{Bad}_x(T)$ ,  $\text{Bad}_y(T)$ , and  $\text{Bad}(T)$  be random variables taking the value 1 if  $T$  is *x-bad*, *y-bad*, and *bad* (respectively) and 0 otherwise. The following technical claim gives a bound on the probability of bad partitions.

**Claim 4.50:** For all  $T_2$ ,  $\Pr[\text{Bad}_x(T) = 1 \mid T_2] < 1/5$ . (Symmetrically, for all  $T_1$ , we have  $\Pr[\text{Bad}_y(T) = 1 \mid T_1] < 1/5$ .)

Suppose that the above claim is true. We show how to use it to prove Lemma 4.49 and only then we will provide the proof of the claim. The next claim says that the “contribution” of good partitions to the random variable  $\text{Row}_0(T)\text{Col}_0(T)$  is significant.

**Claim 4.51:**  $E[\text{Row}_0(T)\text{Col}_0(T)(1 - \text{Bad}(T))] > \frac{1}{5}E[\text{Row}_0(T)\text{Col}_0(T)]$ .

PROOF: We need to prove  $E[\text{Row}_0(T)\text{Col}_0(T)\text{Bad}(T)] \leq \frac{4}{5}E[\text{Row}_0(T)\text{Col}_0(T)]$ . Because  $\text{Bad}(T) \leq \text{Bad}_x(T) + \text{Bad}_y(T)$ , it is enough to prove that

$$E[\text{Row}_0(T)\text{Col}_0(T)\text{Bad}_x(T)] \leq \frac{2}{5}E[\text{Row}_0(T)\text{Col}_0(T)].$$

A symmetric argument will show that this is also true with  $\text{Bad}_y$  instead of  $\text{Bad}_x$ . By Observation 3 above, if we look at all the partitions with some fixed  $T_2$ , then both  $\text{Row}(T)$  and  $\text{Col}_0(T)$  are fixed to some values  $r_{T_2}$  and  $c_{T_2}$  (respectively). Therefore it is sufficient to prove for each  $T_2$  separately.

$$\begin{aligned} E[\text{Row}_0(T)\text{Col}_0(T)\text{Bad}_x(T) \mid T_2] &= c_{T_2}E[\text{Row}_0(T)\text{Bad}_x(T) \mid T_2] \\ &\leq c_{T_2}E[2\text{Row}(T)\text{Bad}_x(T) \mid T_2] \quad \text{by Observation 2} \\ &= 2c_{T_2}r_{T_2}E[\text{Bad}_x(T) \mid T_2] \\ &= 2c_{T_2}r_{T_2}\Pr[\text{Bad}_x(T) = 1 \mid T_2] \\ &< \frac{2}{5}c_{T_2}r_{T_2} \quad \text{by Claim 4.50} \\ &= \frac{2}{5}c_{T_2}E[\text{Row}(T) \mid T_2] \\ &= \frac{2}{5}c_{T_2}E[\text{Row}_0(T) \mid T_2] \quad \text{by Observation 4} \\ &= \frac{2}{5}E[\text{Row}_0(T)\text{Col}_0(T) \mid T_2], \end{aligned}$$

as desired.  $\square$

To prove Lemma 4.49 we would like to express  $\mu(A \cap R)$  and  $\mu(B \cap R)$  in terms of the measures  $\text{Row}$ ,  $\text{Col}$ , and so forth. We will show

**Claim 4.52:**  $\mu(B \cap R) = \frac{1}{4}E[\text{Row}_1(T)\text{Col}_1(T)]$  and  $\mu(A \cap R) = \frac{3}{4}E[\text{Row}_0(T)\text{Col}_0(T)]$ .

PROOF:  $\mu(B \cap R)$  can be written as  $\mu(B) \cdot \mu(R \mid B)$ . By Observation 1,  $\mu(B) = 1/4$ . To compute  $\mu(R \mid B)$  we need to compute the probability that  $(x, y) \in R$  given that  $x$  and  $y$  intersect. This occurs if and only if both  $i \in x$  and  $i \in y$ . Therefore, we need to compute  $\sum_T \Pr[T] \Pr[(x, y) \in R \mid T, i \in x, i \in y]$ . Now, given  $T$ , the choice of  $x$  and the choice of  $y$  are independent, so this is the same as

$$\sum_T \Pr[T] \cdot \Pr[x \in C \mid T, i \in x, i \in y] \cdot \Pr[y \in D \mid T, i \in x, i \in y].$$

Also  $i \in y$  is irrelevant to  $x$  (and  $i \in x$  is irrelevant to  $y$ ) so this is the same as

$$\sum_T \Pr[T] \cdot \Pr[x \in C \mid T, i \in x] \cdot \Pr[y \in D \mid T, i \in y].$$

However, this by definition is simply  $\sum_T \Pr[T] \text{Row}_1(T) \text{Col}_1(T) = \mathbb{E}[\text{Row}_1(T) \text{Col}_1(T)]$ .

For the case of  $\mu(A \cap R)$ , we first note that the probability over pairs  $(x, y)$  obtained by conditioning on those pairs where  $x$  and  $y$  are disjoint (in which we can have  $i \notin x, i \notin y$  or  $i \in x, i \notin y$ , or  $i \notin x, i \in y$ ) is the same probability obtained by conditioning on  $i \notin x \wedge i \notin y$  (in both cases, it is the uniform probability on disjoint  $x$  and  $y$  such that  $|x| = |y| = \ell$ ). With this observation, the proof for this case becomes similar to the previous one.  $\square$

PROOF (OF LEMMA 4.49): By Claim 4.52 we can write:

$$\mu(B \cap R) = \frac{1}{4}\mathbb{E}[\text{Row}_1(T) \text{Col}_1(T)] \geq \frac{1}{4}\mathbb{E}[\text{Row}_1(T) \text{Col}_1(T)(1 - \text{Bad}(T))].$$

Now, if  $\text{Bad}(T) = 1$ , then the partition  $T$  does not contribute anything to the expectation. On the other hand, when  $\text{Bad}(T) = 0$  (that is,  $T$  is good), then by the definition of  $\text{Bad}$  this expectation is at least

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{1}{4}\mathbb{E}\left[\left(\frac{\text{Row}_0(T)}{3} - 2^{-\delta n}\right)\left(\frac{\text{Col}_0(T)}{3} - 2^{-\delta n}\right)(1 - \text{Bad}(T))\right] \\ & > \frac{1}{4}\frac{1}{9}\mathbb{E}[\text{Row}_0(T) \text{Col}_0(T)(1 - \text{Bad}(T))] - 2^{-\delta n} \\ & > \frac{1}{4}\frac{1}{9}\frac{1}{5}\mathbb{E}[\text{Row}_0(T) \text{Col}_0(T)] - 2^{-\delta n} \quad \text{by Claim 4.51} \\ & = \frac{1}{4}\frac{1}{9}\frac{1}{5}\frac{4}{3}\mu(A \cap R) - 2^{-\delta n} \quad \text{by Claim 4.52} \end{aligned}$$

Set  $\alpha = 1/135$  and the lemma follows.  $\square$

PROOF (OF CLAIM 4.50): By Observation 3, all of the partitions with the same  $T_2$  have the same value  $\text{Row}(T)$ . The easy case is where this value satisfies  $\text{Row}(T) \leq 2^{-\delta n}$ . In such a case, using Observation 2,  $\text{Row}_0(T) \leq 2\text{Row}(T) \leq 2 \cdot 2^{-\delta n}$ . Therefore,

$$\text{Row}_0(T)/3 - 2^{-\delta n} < 0 \leq \text{Row}_1(T).$$

Hence, in this case  $\text{Bad}_x(T) = 0$  and  $\Pr[\text{Bad}_x(T) = 1 \mid T_2] = 0$ , and we are done. We now have to deal with the case where  $\text{Row}(T) > 2^{-\delta n}$ . Denote

$$S = \{x : x \in C, |x| = \ell, x \subseteq T_1 \cup \{i\}\}.$$

Then,  $\text{Row}(T) = \Pr[x \in C \mid T] = |S|/(2^\ell)$ . Fix a partition  $T = (T_1, T_2, \{i\})$  and denote  $S' = \{x : x \in C, |x| = \ell, x \subseteq T_1\}$ . Then,

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Row}_0(T) &= \Pr[x \in C \mid T, i \notin x] \\ &= \frac{|S'|}{\binom{2^\ell-1}{\ell}} = \frac{|S'|}{|S|} \frac{|S|}{\binom{2^\ell}{\ell}} \frac{\binom{2^\ell}{\ell}}{\binom{2^\ell-1}{\ell}} = \frac{|S'|}{|S|} \cdot \text{Row}(T) \cdot 2. \end{aligned}$$

If we choose  $s$  uniformly in  $S$ , then  $\Pr[i \notin s] = |S'|/|S|$  (because the condition  $x \subseteq T_1$  is equivalent to  $x \subseteq T_1 \cup \{i\} \wedge i \notin x$ ). Plugging this identity into the above equation we get  $\text{Row}_0(T) = 2\text{Row}(T) \Pr[i \notin s]$ . A similar argument shows  $\text{Row}_1(T) = 2\text{Row}(T) \Pr[i \in s]$ . Finally, note that if  $T$  is  $x$ -bad, then, in particular,  $\text{Row}_1(T) < \text{Row}_0(T)/3$ , hence by the last equalities  $\Pr[i \in s] < \Pr[i \notin s]/3$ , that is  $\Pr[i \in s] < 1/4$ .

Before we continue, let us denote the elements of  $T_1 \cup \{i\}$  by  $k_1, \dots, k_{2\ell}$ , and let  $s_1, \dots, s_{2\ell}$  be random variables such that  $s_j = 1$  if  $k_j \in s$  and 0 otherwise. Note that the random variable  $s$  is completely determined by the random variables  $s_1, \dots, s_{2\ell}$  and that these random variables are *not* independent (because exactly  $\ell$  gets the value 1).

We are now ready to deal with the second case. Suppose toward a contradiction that  $\Pr[\text{Bad}_x(T) | T_2] \geq 1/5$ . Given  $T_2$ , the choice of  $i$  determines  $T$ . Hence for at least  $1/5$  of the  $2\ell$  possible values of  $i$  ( $k_1, \dots, k_{2\ell}$ ) we get a  $T$  that is  $x$ -bad. For each such value  $k_j$ , we proved that  $\Pr[k_j \in s] < 1/4$ . Hence, the *entropy* of the corresponding random variable  $s_j$  satisfies  $H(s_j) < H(1/4) < 0.82$ . The other  $4/5$  of the random variables  $s_j$  clearly satisfy  $H(s_j) \leq H(1/2) = 1$ . Also recall that for any two random variables  $s_1, s_2$ ,  $H(s_1, s_2) \leq H(s_1) + H(s_2)$ . Then,

$$\begin{aligned} H(s) &= H(s_1, \dots, s_{2\ell}) \leq \sum_{j=1}^{2\ell} H(s_j) \leq \frac{2\ell}{5} H(1/4) + \frac{8\ell}{5} H(1/2) \\ &< \frac{2\ell}{5} \cdot 0.82 + \frac{8\ell}{5} = 1.928\ell. \end{aligned}$$

On the other hand,  $s$  is uniformly distributed in  $S$ . Recall that we proved that  $|S| = \text{Row}(T) \binom{2\ell}{\ell}$  and that we are now handling the case where  $\text{Row}(T) \geq 2^{-\delta n}$  (and that  $n = 4\ell - 1$ ). We get,

$$H(s) = \log |S| \geq \log \left( \binom{2\ell}{\ell} 2^{-\delta n} \right)$$

which, using standard estimates of binomial coefficients, is larger (for some constant  $\lambda$ ) than

$$\log \left( \frac{2^{2\ell}}{\lambda \sqrt{\ell}} 2^{-\delta n} \right) = 2\ell - \delta(4\ell - 1) - \log \lambda \sqrt{\ell} = \ell(2 - 4\delta - o(1)).$$

Combining all these together we get that

$$(2 - 4\delta - o(1))\ell \leq H(s) \leq 1.928\ell.$$

If we pick  $\delta$  to be small enough this is a contradiction (to the assumption that the probability is greater than  $1/5$ )  $\square$

The analysis given here for the function DISJ was already used in Example 3.22 (to determine the distributional and randomized communication complexity of DISJ) and in Example 2.19 (to show a large gap between the rank lower bound and the communication complexity). Note that the distribution  $\mu$  used in the proof is *not* a rectangular distribution (in the sense of Definition 3.24). Hence, this proof does not contradict Exercise 3.25.

## 4.7. Communication with Partial Information

The problems we have considered so far have all required Alice and Bob to compute the value  $f(x, y)$  for *every* possible pair  $(x, y)$ . In this section we consider the situation

where not all pairs are possible. That is, where the players have some partial information on what the input pair might be. At this point even the problem of just sending the value of  $x$  from Alice to Bob is not trivial. *Information Theory* deals with this type of questions when communication is *noninteractive*. That is, the information should be delivered using a single message from Alice to Bob. However, modern communication systems allow *interaction* and hence may allow much more efficient communication.

This scenario is formalized as follows: There is some set of possible inputs  $S \subseteq X \times Y$ . Alice holds a value  $x \in X$ , Bob holds  $y \in Y$ , and these values are such that  $(x, y) \in S$ . The goal is for Bob to get the value of  $x$ . Note that there is a difference between this setting and the usual setting that we have discussed so far. Here the communication should enable Bob to learn what  $x$  is (using its knowledge of  $y$ ) but an observer cannot necessarily determine what  $x$  is by just viewing the communication (nor it is necessary that Alice get any information about  $y$ ). If we insist that  $x$  is determined by the communication, then clearly at least  $\log_2 |X|$  bits must be communicated and no savings can be made.

► **Example 4.53:** The NBA problem is the following: Bob Holds  $y = [z, w]$ , where  $z, w \in \{0, 1\}^n$  are two different strings (think about  $y$  and  $z$  as two NBA teams who played against each other last night). Alice holds a string  $x \in \{0, 1\}^n$  that is known to be one of  $y$  and  $z$  (think about  $x$  as the winning team). She wants to send  $x$  to Bob. (Formally, define  $S = \{(x, [z, w]) : z \neq w, x \in \{z, w\}\}.$ ) If Alice wants to send  $x$  to Bob using a one-round (that is, noninteractive), protocol, then she needs to send at least  $n$  bits. Otherwise, there are two strings  $x$  and  $x'$  on which Alice sends the same message. If Bob holds the input  $[x, x']$  he will not be able to distinguish between them (because in both cases his input is the same and he gets the same message).

On the other hand, if we allow two rounds, then  $\log n + 1$  bits are enough: Bob sends Alice an index  $i$  such that  $z_i \neq w_i$  (such an index exists because  $z \neq w$ ), and Alice answers with  $x_i$ . Because we are guaranteed that  $x$  is one of  $z, w$ , then this bit allows Bob to determine what  $x$  is. Hence, there may be an exponential gap between one-round and two-round protocols (see Section 4.2).

Let us denote by  $D^k(S)$  the (deterministic) communication complexity of solving the problem associated with a set  $S \subseteq X \times Y$ , using a  $k$ -round protocol in which Bob is the last to get a message (by the nonsymmetric nature of the problem it makes no sense that Bob sends the last message). Similarly,  $D(S)$  is the communication complexity when there is no restriction on the number of rounds.

**Exercise 4.54:** For every communication problem  $S$ ,  $D(S) \geq \log D^1(S)$ .

This extends Exercise 4.21 in Section 4.2. It means that an exponential gap is the maximal possible, and hence the two-round protocol in Example 4.53 is optimal for that specific  $S$ .

**Exercise 4.55:** Let  $0 \leq d \leq n/2$ . Let  $S$  be the set of all pairs  $(x, y)$  such that  $x, y \in \{0, 1\}^n$  and the Hamming distance between  $x$  and  $y$  (that is, the number of indices in which  $x$  and  $y$  differ) is at most  $d$ . Prove that  $D(S)$  and  $D^1(S)$  are both  $\Theta(\log \binom{n}{d})$ .

To analyze the rounds complexity associated with a problem  $S$ , define a *hypergraph*  $G_S = (V, E)$  as follows: The vertices are the elements of  $X$ , and for every  $y \in Y$  there is a hyperedge  $e_y = \{x : (x, y) \in S\}$ . A *coloring* of  $G_S$  with  $c$  colors is a function  $\psi : V \rightarrow \{1, \dots, c\}$  such that for every hyperedge  $e \in E$  the vertices have different colors (that is, for all  $v \in e$ , the values  $\psi(v)$  are distinct). The *chromatic number* of  $G_S$ , denoted  $\chi(G_S)$ , is the minimal value  $c$  for which a coloring exists. The *degree* of  $G_S$ , denoted  $d(G_S)$ , is the size (number of vertices) of the maximal hyperedge.

**Exercise 4.56:** For every communication problem  $S$ ,  $D^1(S) = \lceil \log \chi(G_S) \rceil$ . (This extends Exercise 4.18.)

**Exercise 4.57:** For every communication problem  $S$ ,  $D(S) \geq \log(d(G_S))$ .

For studying the two-round complexity, we need the following claim that guarantees the existence of a certain family of functions (sometime called “hash functions”).

**Claim 4.58:** Let  $m$  and  $t$  be any two integers. There exist constants  $c_1$  and  $c_2$ , and a family of  $k = c_2 t \ln m$  functions,  $H_{m,t}$ , such that (1) every function  $h \in H_{m,t}$  goes from  $\{1, \dots, m\}$  to  $\{1, \dots, p\}$ , where  $p = c_1 t^2$ , and (2) for every subset  $A \subseteq \{1, \dots, m\}$  of size at most  $t$ , at least half of the functions in  $H_{m,t}$  are 1–1 over  $A$ .

**PROOF:** The proof is by a probabilistic argument. Choose  $k$  such functions at random (that is, the value of each  $h$  on each element of  $\{1, \dots, m\}$  is chosen at random in  $\{1, \dots, p\}$  independently of all other choices). For a fixed set  $A$  of size at most  $t$ , the probability that a random function  $h$  is 1–1 is at least  $1 \cdot \frac{p-1}{p} \cdots \frac{p-t+1}{p} \geq (1 - \frac{t}{p})^t = (1 - \frac{1}{c_1 t})^t$ , which for an appropriate choice of  $c_1$  is at least  $3/4$ . Now, if  $k$  random functions  $h_1, \dots, h_k$  are chosen, define random variables  $Z_i$  to be 1 if  $h_i$  is 1–1 over  $A$  and 0 otherwise. By the above,  $E[Z_i] \geq 3/4$ . The probability that at least  $1/2$  of them are 1–1 over  $A$  is just the probability that  $\sum_{i=1}^k Z_i \geq k/2$ , which, using the Chernoff inequality, is at most  $e^{-\theta(k)}$ . Finally, the probability that there exists a set  $A$  for which less than half of the functions are 1–1 is bounded by the number of such sets which is  $m^{O(t)}$  times  $e^{-\theta(k)}$ . By an appropriate choice of  $c_2$ , this product is smaller than 1, which implies the existence of a family  $H_{m,t}$  as required.  $\square$

We now use this claim to prove that two-round protocols are optimal (up to constants). This is in contrast to the regular scenario, of computing a function  $f(x, y)$ , where we proved that for every  $k$ ,  $k + 1$ -round protocols may be much more efficient than  $k$ -round protocols (Section 4.2).

**Lemma 4.59:** For every communication problem  $S$ ,  $D^2(S) = O(D(S))$ .

**PROOF:** We present a two-round protocol for the communication problem  $S$ . This protocol uses the hypergraph  $G_S$ . Fix a coloring  $\psi$  of  $G_S$  with  $\chi(G_S)$  colors, and fix a family of functions  $H = H_{\chi(G_S), d(G_S)}$ , as guaranteed by Claim 4.58. Bob considers the edge  $e_y$ , which determines all possible  $x$ s that Alice may hold. He chooses a function

$h \in H$  such that  $h$  is  $1 - 1$  on the colors of the vertices in  $e_y$  and sends its name to Alice. Such an  $h$  exists by the properties of  $H$  and since the size of  $e_y$  is at most  $d(G_S)$ . Due to the size of  $H$  this requires  $O(\log d(G_S) + \log \log \chi(G_S))$  bits. Alice sends the value  $h(\psi(x))$ , which is  $O(\log d(G_S))$  bits long. Since  $h$  is  $1 - 1$  on the colors of vertices in  $e_y$ , Bob can determine from  $h(\psi(x))$  what  $\psi(x)$  is and, by  $\psi$  being a legal coloring, what  $x$  is. The total number of bits transmitted is  $O(\log d(G_S) + \log \log \chi(G_S))$ . Finally note that, by Exercise 4.57  $D(S) \geq \log d(G_S)$  and, by combining Exercise 4.56 with Exercise 4.54,  $D(S) \geq \log \log \chi(G_S)$ . All together we get that  $D^2(S) = O(D(S))$ .  $\square$

Now consider the direct-sum version of this problem (see Section 4.1): Alice is given  $x^1, \dots, x^\ell$ , Bob is given  $y^1, \dots, y^\ell$  such that for all  $i$ ,  $(x^i, y^i) \in S$ . The communication problem  $S^\ell$  is for Bob to get from Alice the values  $x^1, \dots, x^\ell$ . The naive approach for doing so is by solving the problem independently for each of the  $\ell$  instances  $(x^i, y^i)$ . The cost of this (using the above protocol) is  $D^2(S^\ell) = O(\ell \cdot \log d(G_S) + \ell \cdot \log \log \chi(G_S))$ . In what follows we show that sometimes a savings can be obtained.

**Lemma 4.60:** *For every communication problem  $S$ ,*

$$D^2(S^\ell) = O(\ell \cdot \log d(G_S) + \log \ell \cdot \log \log \chi(G_S)).$$

PROOF: The idea is to use a protocol similar to the one presented in the proof of Lemma 4.59, but instead of using a different  $h$  for each instance the players “recycle” the  $h$ s. This uses the fact that not only does  $H$  contain a function that is  $1 - 1$  on the colors of vertices in  $e_y$  but that at least half of the functions have this property.

Bob considers the colors of vertices in each of the edges  $e_{y^1}, \dots, e_{y^\ell}$ . For each of them, half of the functions in  $H$  are  $1 - 1$ . Hence there exists a function  $h_1 \in H$  that is  $1 - 1$  for at least half of  $e_{y^1}, \dots, e_{y^\ell}$ . Now Bob considers the remaining half of the hyperedges for which  $h_1$  is not  $1 - 1$  (there might be less than half but this can only help). He finds a function  $h_2 \in H$  that is  $1 - 1$  for at least half of those hyperedges and so forth. This way Bob finds  $O(\log \ell)$  functions such that for every hyperedge  $e_{y^i}$  at least one of the functions, denoted  $h_{j(i)}$ , is  $1 - 1$ . Moreover, each  $h_j$  is “responsible” for  $1/2^j$  of the hyperedges. Now Bob sends the names of these functions to Alice ( $O(\log \ell (\log d(G_S) + \log \log \chi(G_S)))$  bits). In addition, for each  $i$ , Bob tells Alice which function in the list should be used on  $e_{y^i}$  (that is,  $j(i)$ ). The obvious way for doing this is by sending  $O(\ell \log \log \ell)$  bits. However, because  $h_1$  is good for  $\frac{1}{2}$  of the hyperedges,  $h_2$  is good for  $\frac{1}{4}$  of the hyperedges, and so forth, then, by using a better coding,  $O(\ell)$  bits are enough (for example, if we encode  $h_i$  by a string of  $i$  1s, then the total communication is of size  $\sum_{i=1}^{O(\log \ell)} \frac{\ell}{2^i} \cdot i = O(\ell)$ ). Finally, in the second round, Alice sends for every  $i$  the value  $h_{j(i)}(\psi(x^i))$ , which as before enables Bob to determine what  $x^i$  is. This requires  $O(\ell \log d(G_S))$  bits. All together the protocol has the desired complexity.  $\square$

- **Example 4.61:** Consider the NBA communication problem  $S$  considered in Example 4.53. Let  $G_S$  be the corresponding hypergraph. Observe that  $\chi(G_S) = 2^n$  (because every two vertices have a common edge) and that  $d(G_S) = 2$ . Hence  $D(S^\ell)$  in this case is  $O(\ell + \log \ell \log n)$ , which is better than the  $O(\ell \log n)$  bound that can be obtained just by repeating  $\ell$  times the protocol for  $S$ .

## 4.8. Bibliographic Notes

The direct-sum question with respect to communication complexity was raised in the work of [Karchmer, Raz, and Wigderson 1991]. First results were obtained by [Feder et al. 1991] and then by [Karchmer et al. 1992a]. Related results were achieved by [Edmonds et al. 1991, Håstad and Wigderson 1993, Impagliazzo, Raz, and Wigderson 1994b, Ahlswede and Cai 1994] and by [Tamm 1995]. Example 4.13 is from [Mehlhorn and Schmidt 1982]. The direct-sum problem in the randomized case was handled in [Feder et al. 1991] (which, in fact, presents a somewhat better solution than the one given here) and in the nondeterministic case in [Feder et al. 1991, Karchmer et al. 1992a]. Lemma 4.15 and Example 4.16 are both due to [Dietzfelbinger, Hromkovic, and Schnitger 1994].

The issue of rounds versus communication complexity was first discussed in the work of [Papadimitriou and Sipser 1982]. Their results were later improved by [Đuriš, Galil, and Schnitger 1984, McGeoch 1986] and [Nisan and Wigderson 1991]. Theorem 4.26, which is due to the work of [Miltersen et al. 1995], abstracts the technique used in most of these previous papers. The pointer jumping function PJ (Exercise 4.31) was the example used in most of the above work, and Example 4.30 is a special case of it. Randomized one-round communication complexity was discussed in [Ablayev 1993, Kremer, Nisan, and Ron 1995, Newman and Szegedy 1995]. The model of simultaneous protocols presented in Exercise 4.22 was considered in [Yao 1979, Kremer et al. 1995] and the randomized communication complexity of EQ was determined in [Newman and Szegedy 1996]. Part 3 of Exercise 4.22 is due to [Babai and Kimmel 1996].

The model of asymmetric communication complexity (Section 4.3) was considered in [Miltersen 1994, Miltersen et al. 1995]. Other lower bounds for asymmetric communication complexity were implicitly proved, using a round-by-round technique, in Ajtai 1988] and explicitly in [Miltersen 1994, Miltersen et al. 1995].

Pseudorandom generators for communication complexity were introduced (in a more general setting than what is presented here) in [Impagliazzo, Nisan, and Wigderson 1994a]. The construction of the generator presented here can use any other construction of regular expanders with  $\lambda \ll D$ .

Classes of communication complexity problems and the notions of reducibility and completeness were presented by [Babai et al. 1986]. In addition to the classes presented here, which are due to [Babai et al. 1986], analogues of various other complexity classes were discussed. In particular, the analogues of the complexity classes *FewP* and *UP* [Karchmer et al. 1992b], of the class *PP* [Paturi and Simon 1984, Alon et al. 1985], of the class  $\oplus P$  [Krause and Waack 1991], counting classes [Damm et al. 1992], the class  $\#P$  [Meinel and Waack 1994], Arthur–Merlin games [Lam and Ruzzo 1989], and the class *Quantum-P* [Yao 1993, Kremer 1995]. For a general treatment of the corresponding computational complexity classes see, for example, [Papadimitriou 1994].

The distributional (and randomized) communication complexity of the disjointness function (*DISJ*) was first handled by [Babai et al. 1986]. Their results were improved in the work of [Kalyanasundaram and Schnitger 1987]. A simplified proof was presented by [Razborov 1990a]. His proof is presented in this section.

Communication with partial information was extensively studied by [Orlitsky 1990, Orlitsky 1991a, Orlitsky 1992, Orlitsky 1991b, Naor, Orlitsky, and Shor 1993, Zhang and Xia 1994] and [Alon and Orlitsky 1995] (in these papers the notion *Interactive communication* is used). An explicit construction of a family  $H_{m,t}$ , which has the properties required in Claim 4.58 (with slightly different parameters), appears in [Fredman 1984]. Lemma 4.60 is based on [Feder et al. 1991].

## Cambridge Books Online

<http://ebooks.cambridge.org/>



Communication Complexity

Eyal Kushilevitz, Noam Nisan

Book DOI: <http://dx.doi.org/10.1017/CBO9780511574948>

Online ISBN: 9780511574948

Hardback ISBN: 9780521560672

Paperback ISBN: 9780521029834

## Chapter

5 - The Communication Complexity of Relations pp. 71-82

Chapter DOI: <http://dx.doi.org/10.1017/CBO9780511574948.006>

Cambridge University Press

## CHAPTER 5

# The Communication Complexity of Relations

---

In the first part of this book we were interested in computing *functions*. That is, for any input  $(x, y)$  there was a unique value  $f(x, y)$  that Alice and Bob had to compute. More general types of problems are *relations*. In this case, on input  $(x, y)$  there might be several values that are valid outputs. Formally,

**Definition 5.1:** A relation  $R$  is a subset  $R \subseteq X \times Y \times Z$ . The communication problem  $R$  is the following: Alice is given  $x \in X$ , Bob is given  $y \in Y$ , and their task is to find some  $z \in Z$  that satisfies the relation. That is,  $(x, y, z) \in R$ .

Note that functions are a special case of the above definition, where  $z$  is uniquely defined. Also note that it may be the case that for a certain input pair  $(x, y)$  there is no value  $z$  such that  $(x, y, z) \in R$ . We say that this input is *illegal* and we assume that it is never given as an input to Alice and Bob. Alternatively, we can assume that for every  $(x, y)$  there must exist a possible value  $z$ . For example, by extending the relation  $R$  and allowing every output  $z$  for the illegal pairs (that is,  $(x, y, z) \in R$  for all  $z \in Z$ ).

The definition of a *protocol* (Definition 1.1) remains unchanged. The complexity measures for relations are also simple extensions of the definitions given for functions:

**Definition 5.2:** A protocol  $\mathcal{P}$  computes a relation  $R$  if for every legal input  $(x, y) \in X \times Y$ , the protocol reaches a leaf marked by a value  $z$  such that  $(x, y, z) \in R$ . The deterministic communication complexity of a relation  $R$ , denoted  $D(R)$ , is the number of bits sent on the worst case input (legal or illegal) by the best protocol that computes  $R$ . Other complexity measures are defined in a similar manner.

Note that the complexity of a protocol is the depth of its tree. An alternative definition of cost may restrict the tree to *legal* inputs only. It can be easily seen that the two possible definitions of cost are equivalent. Also note that measures such as  $N^1(R)$  are not as interesting anymore, since the value “1” has no important role in this case. Yet,  $N(R)$  is still defined and useful. Many of the basic properties of the complexity measures that were proved for functions hold for relations as well. However, we need

|     | 000         | 001         | 010         | 011         | 100         | 101         | 110         | 111         |
|-----|-------------|-------------|-------------|-------------|-------------|-------------|-------------|-------------|
| 000 | $\emptyset$ | {3}         | {2}         | {2, 3}      | {1}         | {1, 3}      | {1, 2}      | {1, 2, 3}   |
| 001 | {3}         | $\emptyset$ | {2, 3}      | {2}         | {1, 3}      | {1}         | {1, 2, 3}   | {1, 2}      |
| 010 | {2}         | {2, 3}      | $\emptyset$ | {3}         | {1, 2}      | {1, 2, 3}   | {1}         | {1, 3}      |
| 011 | {2, 3}      | {2}         | {3}         | $\emptyset$ | {1, 2, 3}   | {1, 2}      | {1, 3}      | {1}         |
| 100 | {1}         | {1, 3}      | {1, 2}      | {1, 2, 3}   | $\emptyset$ | {3}         | {2}         | {2, 3}      |
| 101 | {1, 3}      | {1}         | {1, 2, 3}   | {1, 2}      | {3}         | $\emptyset$ | {2, 3}      | {2}         |
| 110 | {1, 2}      | {1, 2, 3}   | {1}         | {1, 3}      | {2}         | {2, 3}      | $\emptyset$ | {3}         |
| 111 | {1, 2, 3}   | {1, 2}      | {1, 3}      | {1}         | {2, 3}      | {2}         | {3}         | $\emptyset$ |

**Figure 5.1:** Covering for a relation with monochromatic rectangles

to check carefully before applying any of these properties to relations. For example, we will see below that the gap between the deterministic communication complexity and nondeterministic communication complexity of relations may be exponential (as opposed to at most quadratic in the case of functions (Theorem 2.11)).

The notion of *monochromatic rectangles* is central to the study of relations as well. Formally,

**Definition 5.3:** *A  $\times$  B is a monochromatic rectangle (with respect to relation R) if there exists a value z such that for every  $(x, y) \in A \times B$  either  $(x, y, z) \in R$  or  $(x, y)$  is illegal.*

For example, in Figure 5.1 a relation is considered for which  $X = Y = \{0, 1\}^3$  and  $Z = \{1, 2, 3\}$ . A triple  $(x, y, z)$  satisfies the relation if the z-th bit of x is different than the z-th bit of y. The figure shows a partition of  $X \times Y$  into monochromatic rectangles (each row in the figure represents  $x \in X$ , each column represents  $y \in Y$ , and the entry  $(x, y)$  contains the set of all z such that  $(x, y, z) \in R$ ). Note, for example, that the upper-right rectangle is monochromatic, because the value 1 is common to all entries. Also note that the upper-left rectangle is monochromatic, because the value 3 is common for all legal inputs (the pair (000, 000) for example is illegal). This partition corresponds to the protocol in which Alice sends her first bit. Bob outputs 1 if his first bit is different or “continue” if not. Then Alice sends her second bit and Bob outputs 2 if his second bit is different or otherwise he outputs 3.

As in the case of functions, the following is true:

**Proposition 5.4:** *Any t-bit protocol P that computes the relation R induces a partition of  $X \times Y$  into at most  $2^t$  monochromatic rectangles.*

As before, the main issue is how to prove lower bounds. The following example shows that the fooling set method and the rectangle size method (Section 1.3), appropriately modified for the case of relations, may still be useful.

- **Example 5.5:** We saw that given sets  $x, y \subseteq \{1, \dots, n\}$ , it is difficult for Alice and Bob to decide whether these sets are disjoint or not. That is, we proved that the communication

complexity of the function  $\text{DISJ}$  is  $\Omega(n)$  both in the deterministic case (Example 1.23) and in the randomized case (Example 3.22). Certainly, computing the size of the intersection can only be more difficult. Consider the *approximation* variant of this problem. That is, the relation

$$R = \left\{ (x, y, m) \mid |x \cap y| - \frac{n}{12} \leq m \leq |x \cap y| + \frac{n}{12} \right\}.$$

We will show that  $D(R) = \Omega(n)$  by exhibiting the existence of a large “fooling set.” To do so, we pick  $t$  random subsets  $S_1, \dots, S_t$  of  $\{1, \dots, n\}$  and consider the pairs of inputs  $(S_1, \bar{S}_1), \dots, (S_t, \bar{S}_t)$ . In each such pair the two sets are disjoint. Hence, Alice and Bob need to output some value  $m$  that is at most  $n/12$ . We claim that in a “successful” choice of the sets no two of these pairs can be in the same monochromatic rectangle. For this, it is enough to prove that  $|S_i \cap \bar{S}_j| > n/6$  (for all  $i \neq j$ ), because this implies that any output that is at most  $n/12$  is invalid for  $(S_i, \bar{S}_j)$ . Therefore, we now compute the probability that two random subsets  $S_i$  and  $\bar{S}_j$  of  $\{1, \dots, n\}$  have intersection of size at most  $n/6$  (if  $S_j$  is a random subset then so is  $\bar{S}_j$ ). Let  $Z_k$  be a random variable, which gets the value 1 if  $k$  belongs to both  $S_i$  and  $\bar{S}_j$ . Hence,  $E[Z_k] = 1/4$ . By the Chernoff inequality,

$$\Pr \left[ \sum_{k=1}^n Z_k \leq n/6 \right] \leq \Pr \left[ \left| \frac{\sum_{k=1}^n Z_k}{n} - \frac{1}{4} \right| \geq \frac{1}{12} \right] \leq 2e^{-\frac{(1/12)^2}{2/1+3/4}n} < \frac{1}{2^{cn}},$$

for some constant  $c$ . Hence, the probability that  $|S_i \cap \bar{S}_j| \leq n/6$  for some  $S_i, \bar{S}_j$ , is smaller than  $t^2 2^{-cn}$ . For  $t = 2^{cn/2}$  this probability is smaller than 1. In other words, there exist  $t = 2^{\Omega(n)}$  sets  $S_i$  such that the pairs  $(S_1, \bar{S}_1), \dots, (S_t, \bar{S}_t)$  must all belong to distinct monochromatic rectangles. That is,  $D(R) = \Omega(n)$ .

On the other hand, the randomized communication complexity of  $R$  is low;  $O(1)$  in the public coin model, and  $O(\log n)$  in the private coin model. To see this, let Alice and Bob pick at random (using the public coin, with no communication)  $\ell = 200$  points in  $\{1, \dots, n\}$ . For each of these points Alice sends a bit indicating whether  $i \in x$ . Bob computes  $Z_i = 1$  if  $i$  belongs to both  $x$  and  $y$  and outputs  $m = n \cdot \sum_{j=1}^{\ell} Z_j / \ell$  (rounded to the closest integer). The probability that the output is wrong, that is,  $m$  is too far from  $|x \cap y|$  is, by Hoeffding inequality,

$$\Pr \left[ \left| \frac{\sum_{j=1}^{\ell} Z_j}{\ell} - \frac{|x \cap y|}{n} \right| \geq \frac{1}{12} \right] \leq 2e^{-2\ell(1/12)^2} < \frac{1}{4},$$

as desired.

**Exercise 5.6:** For  $x, y \in \{0, 1\}^n$ , denote by  $d(x, y)$  the Hamming distance between  $x$  and  $y$  (that is, the number of indices in that  $x$  and  $y$  differ). Let  $R$  be a relation consisting of all triples  $(x, y, m)$  such that  $|m - d(x, y)| \leq n/3$ . In other words, computing  $R$  is the problem of approximating the Hamming distance between  $x$  and  $y$ . Prove that  $D(R) = \Omega(n)$ . (Observe that computing the Hamming distance exactly is as hard as computing the equality function,  $\text{EQ}$ .)

Many of the relations we will analyze are of the following nature: Alice holds an input  $x \in X$ , Bob holds an input  $y \in Y$ , and they are looking for an index  $i$  such that the

$i$ -th bit of  $x$  is different from the  $i$ -th bit of  $y$ . The motivation for studying these relations (as well as explanations for the choice of names for them) will become clear only in Chapter 10 when we discuss the applications of the results for lower bounds on circuit depth. One property that we will prove for this type of relation is that the gap between the deterministic communication complexity and the nondeterministic communication complexity may be huge. Hence, the fooling set method and the rectangle size method, that actually give lower bounds for the nondeterministic communication complexity, cannot yield strong lower bounds. In addition, it is not clear how to generalize the rank lower bound method (Section 1.4) so as to make it applicable to relations. Hence, we need to develop new lower bound techniques.

### 5.1. Basic Examples

We start by giving some upper and lower bounds for simple relations.

- **Example 5.7:** The *universal relation*  $U \subseteq \{0, 1\}^n \times \{0, 1\}^n \times \{1, \dots, n\}$  consists of all triples  $(x, y, i)$  such that  $x_i \neq y_i$  (pairs  $(x, y)$  such that  $x = y$  are illegal). The case  $n = 3$  is exactly the relation shown in Figure 5.1. An obvious upper bound for this relation is  $D(U) \leq n + \log n$  (Alice sends  $x$  and Bob finds an index  $i$  as needed). On the other hand, we prove  $D(U) \geq D(\text{NE}) - 2 = n - 2$  (where  $\text{NE}$  is the nonequality function, as in Example 1.21). To see this, assume a protocol  $\mathcal{P}_U$  for  $U$  is given and construct a protocol for  $\text{NE}$  as follows: Alice and Bob use  $\mathcal{P}_U$  on  $(x, y)$ . If the communication does not correspond to any output  $i \in \{1, \dots, n\}$ , then the output is 0 (that is,  $x = y$ ). Otherwise, if they get an output  $i$ , then Alice sends  $x_i$  to Bob, who outputs 1 if indeed  $x_i \neq y_i$  and 0 otherwise. If  $x \neq y$ , then  $\mathcal{P}_U$  is guaranteed to output  $i$  such that  $x_i \neq y_i$  so the output will be 1. If  $x = y$ , then although  $\mathcal{P}_U$  was not designed to take care of such inputs, still its communication on  $(x, y)$  may correspond to some output  $i$  (if it does not then the protocol outputs 0). However, no matter what the output  $i$  of  $\mathcal{P}_U$  may be, the result in this case will always be 0.

Note that  $N(U) = O(\log n)$ . Alice “guesses”  $i$  and sends  $i$  together with  $x_i$  to Bob, who can verify this guess (recall that inputs with  $x = y$  are illegal). This implies that, when relations are considered, the gap between deterministic and nondeterministic communication complexity may be exponential.

The universal relation allows the input  $x$  to be *any*  $n$ -bit string, and similarly  $y$  could be any  $n$ -bit string. We will be interested in the communication complexity of relations for which  $X$  and  $Y$  are restricted.

- **Example 5.8:** Let  $X \subseteq \{0, 1\}^n$  be the set of all strings whose parity is 1 (that is,  $x$  such that  $\sum_{i=1}^n x_i \bmod 2 = 1$ ) and  $Y \subseteq \{0, 1\}^n$  be the set of all strings whose parity is 0. Let the parity relation,  $R_{\oplus}$ , be the set of all triples  $(x, y, i)$  such that  $x \in X$ ,  $y \in Y$ , and  $x_i \neq y_i$  ( $X \cap Y = \emptyset$ , hence  $x \neq y$  and so such index  $i$  always exists). We show that  $D(R_{\oplus}) \leq 2 \log n$ . Alice and Bob will do a binary search for a bit  $i$  such that  $x_i \neq y_i$ . At each stage they will have a set  $\{j, \dots, k\}$  such that the parity of  $x_j, \dots, x_k$  is different than the parity of  $y_j, \dots, y_k$ . They start with the set  $\{1, \dots, n\}$ . At each stage they compute

$\ell = \lfloor (j+k)/2 \rfloor$ . Alice sends the parity of  $x_j, \dots, x_\ell$  (one bit) and Bob sends the parity of  $y_j, \dots, y_\ell$  (one bit). If these parities are different, then they set  $k = \ell$  and continue. If the parities are equal, they conclude that the parity of  $x_{\ell+1}, \dots, x_k$  and the parity of  $y_{\ell+1}, \dots, y_k$  are different, so they set  $j = \ell + 1$  and continue. In each case the size of the set  $\{j, \dots, k\}$  is divided by two. All together there are  $\log n$  stages, at each stage 2 bits are exchanged, and when the set is of size 1, then the index  $j = k$  is the desired bit.

The next lemma shows that this is the best possible protocol for  $R_+$ . In fact, the lemma is much more general.

**Lemma 5.9:** *Let  $X$  and  $Y$  be disjoint subsets of  $\{0, 1\}^n$ . Let*

$$C = \{(x, y) : x \in X, y \in Y, d(x, y) = 1\},$$

*where  $d(x, y)$  denotes the Hamming distance between  $x$  and  $y$  (that is, the number of indices in which  $x$  and  $y$  differ). Let  $R$  be the relation defined by all triples  $(x, y, i)$  such that  $x \in X$ ,  $y \in Y$ , and  $x_i \neq y_i$ . Then the partition number of  $R$  satisfies  $C^D(R) \geq \frac{|C|^2}{|X||Y|}$ .*

PROOF: Let  $R_1, \dots, R_t$  be the monochromatic rectangles (with respect to the relation  $R$ ) in the optimal partition of  $X \times Y$ . Denote by  $m_i$  the number of  $C$ -elements in  $R_i$  and by  $|R_i|$  the number of elements in the rectangle. By definition,

$$|C| = \sum_{i=1}^t m_i. \quad 5.1$$

Also, since we start from a partition,

$$\sum_{i=1}^t |R_i| = |X||Y|. \quad 5.2$$

On the other hand, let  $j$  be the output corresponding to the rectangle  $R_i$ . In every row  $x$  of  $R_i$  there is at most one  $C$ -element; this is because all  $y$ s in the rectangle differ from  $x$  in the  $j$ -th bit and for  $(x, y)$  to be in  $C$  the string  $y$  must differ from  $x$  in *exactly* one bit. Similarly, in every column of  $R_i$  there is at most one  $C$ -element. Hence, both the number of rows and the number of columns in  $R_i$  are greater than  $m_i$  and so

$$|R_i| \geq m_i^2. \quad 5.3$$

We get

$$\begin{aligned} |C|^2 &= \left( \sum_{i=1}^t m_i \right)^2 && \text{By Equation 5.1} \\ &\leq t \sum_{i=1}^t m_i^2 && \text{By Cauchy-Schwartz inequality} \\ &\leq t \sum_{i=1}^t |R_i| && \text{By Equation 5.3} \\ &= t|X||Y| && \text{By Equation 5.2} \end{aligned}$$

Altogether we get  $t \geq \frac{|C|^2}{|X||Y|}$ . □

To use Lemma 5.9 for the relation  $R_{\oplus}$ , we take  $X$  to be the set of all strings whose parity is 1 and  $Y$  to be the set of all strings whose parity is 0. In this case, the relation  $R$  defined in Lemma 5.9 is exactly  $R_{\oplus}$ . In addition, note that  $|X| = |Y| = 2^{n-1}$ , whereas  $|C| = n2^{n-1}$  (because for every  $x \in X$  each of the  $n$  strings in Hamming distance 1 from  $x$  is in  $Y$ ). Hence,  $C^D(R_{\oplus}) \geq n^2$ , which implies  $D(R_{\oplus}) \geq 2 \log n$ .

**Exercise 5.10\***: Let  $X \subseteq \{0, 1\}^n$  be the set of all strings in that the number of 1s is larger than the number of 0s, and  $Y \subseteq \{0, 1\}^n$  be the set of all strings in that the number of 1s is at most as large as the number of 0s. Let the majority relation,  $R_{\text{MAJ}}$ , be the set of all triples  $(x, y, i)$  such that  $x \in X$ ,  $y \in Y$ , and  $x_i \neq y_i$ . Prove that  $D(R_{\text{MAJ}}) = \Theta(\log n)$ . Hint: For the upper bound, prove first that  $D(R_{\text{MAJ}}) = O(\log^2 n)$  and then improve this bound.

**Exercise 5.11:** Prove that  $C^D(R) \geq n^2$  is the best lower that can be proven by using Lemma 5.9.

► **Example 5.12:** We now return to the universal relation and show that its randomized complexity,  $R(U)$ , is  $O(\log n)$ . In fact, for convenience, we will prove  $R^{\text{pub}}(U) = O(\log n)$ . However, the transformation of public coin protocols to private coin protocols, presented in Section 3.3, works for relations as well.

Alice and Bob repeat the following  $t$  times: They choose (using the public coin) a random string  $r \in \{0, 1\}^n$ . Alice sends Bob the inner product  $\langle x, r \rangle$  (one bit) and similarly Bob sends  $\langle y, r \rangle$ . If these two bits are different, then Alice and Bob restrict  $x$  and  $y$  (respectively) to the bits where  $r_i = 1$ . On these bits the parity of  $x$  is different than the parity of  $y$ , and so they can use a (deterministic!) binary search, as in Example 5.8, to find a bit  $i$  such that  $x_i \neq y_i$  (and the protocol terminates with  $i$  as its output). The cost of the binary search is  $O(\log n)$  bits. If they fail in all  $t$  attempts to find a string  $r$  such that  $\langle x, r \rangle \neq \langle y, r \rangle$  they output an arbitrary  $i$ . The number of bits exchanged is  $2t + O(\log n)$ . The error probability is  $2^{-t}$  because for  $x \neq y$  the probability that  $\langle x, r \rangle \neq \langle y, r \rangle$ , for a random  $r$ , is exactly  $1/2$ . For  $t = \log n$  we get  $O(\log n)$  communication and error probability of  $1/n$ .

Note that this can be extended to show that the *zero error* complexity,  $R_0(U)$  is also  $O(\log n)$ . This is done by letting Alice, in case that in all  $t$  stages no  $r$  was found, send her input  $x$  to Bob. Because the probability of this event happening is only  $1/n$ , then the expected number of bits exchanged remains logarithmic and error never occurs.

► **Example 5.13:** A similar relation is the universal *monotone* relation  $U_m \subseteq \{0, 1\}^n \times \{0, 1\}^n \times \{1, \dots, n\}$  that consists of all triples  $(x, y, i)$  such that  $x_i = 1$  and  $y_i = 0$  (pairs  $(x, y)$  for that no such  $i$  exists are illegal). As for  $U$ , here we also have  $D(U_m) \leq n + \log n$ . Also,  $D(U_m) \geq D(\text{DISJ}) - 2 = n - 2$  (see Example 1.23). To see this, assume we are given a protocol  $\mathcal{P}_{U_m}$  for  $U_m$  and construct a protocol for DISJ as follows: Given an inputs  $(x, y)$ , Alice and Bob, use  $\mathcal{P}_{U_m}$  on  $(x, y')$ , where  $y'$  is obtained from  $y$  by flipping all the bits. Note that  $x$  and  $y$  intersect if and only if there exists some  $i$  such that  $x_i = y'_i = 1$ , which occurs if and only if there exists some  $i$  such that  $x_i = 1$  and  $y'_i = 0$ . When they get an output  $i$ , then Alice sends  $x_i$  to Bob, who outputs 0 if indeed  $x_i = 1$  and  $y'_i = 0$

and 1 otherwise. If indeed  $x$  intersects  $y$ , then  $\mathcal{P}_{U_m}$  is guaranteed to output  $i$  such that  $x_i = 1$  and  $y'_i = 0$  so the output will be 0. If  $x$  and  $y$  are disjoint, then no matter what the output  $i$  of  $\mathcal{P}_{U_m}$  is, the result in this case will always be 1.

The same proof shows that  $R(U_m) \geq R(\text{DISJ}) - 2 = \Omega(n)$  (see Example 3.22), which exhibits a significant difference between  $U$  and  $U_m$ .

## 5.2. The Pair–Disjointness Relation

Examples 5.7 and 5.13 show that sometimes lower bounds on the communication complexity of relations can be proven by reducing the problem of computing these relations to that of computing certain functions and then using results (and machinery) developed for the case of computing functions. The following example goes in the same direction but is much less obvious.

Let  $n = 3m$ . Let  $X$  consist of all ordered sets  $P$  of  $m$  pairs of elements out of  $\{1, \dots, n\}$ , where the  $2m$  elements in  $P$  are all distinct. Let  $Y$  consist of all sets  $S$  of  $m-1$  elements out of  $\{1, \dots, n\}$ . The pair–disjointness relation  $M \subseteq X \times Y \times \{1, \dots, m\}$  consists of all triples  $(P, S, i)$  where  $P$  and  $S$  are as above and  $i$  is such that the  $i$ -th pair of  $P$  contains no element of  $S$ . Note that due to the cardinalities of  $S$  and  $P$  such an index  $i$  always exists. For example, let  $m = 5$ ,  $P = \{(4, 7), (2, 13), (1, 3), (15, 10), (8, 11)\}$ , and  $S = \{3, 4, 10, 15\}$ , then  $(P, S, i)$  satisfies  $M$  for  $i = 2$  and  $i = 5$ . We will prove that  $D(M) = \Omega(m)$ .

First, note that the problem only becomes easier if the input is restricted to  $(P, S)$  such that any pair in  $P$  contains at most one element of  $S$  (that is, all other input pairs are illegal). Call this new relation  $M'$ . We have  $D(M') \leq D(M)$ . Now consider the following relation  $f$  (in fact,  $f$  is what we call a *partial* function): Bob gets as an input a set  $S$ , this time of size  $m$ . Alice gets  $P$  as before, where again  $(P, S)$  is such that no pair in  $P$  contains two elements of  $S$ . If there is a pair in  $P$  that does not contain any element of  $S$ , then  $f(P, S) = 0$  and if each pair contains an element of  $S$  ( $S$  is of size  $m$ , so this is possible), then  $f(P, S) = 1$ .

**Lemma 5.14:**  $R_{1/4}^{\text{pub}}(f) \leq 2(D(M') + \log n)$ .

**PROOF:** Given a deterministic protocol  $\mathcal{P}_{M'}$  for  $M'$ , we construct a randomized protocol (in the public coin model),  $\mathcal{P}_f$ , that computes  $f$  with about the same communication complexity and makes an error, with probability at most  $1/2$ , only when the output is 0 (by repeating this twice, we reduce the error probability to  $1/4$ ). The protocol  $\mathcal{P}_f$  works as follows: On input  $(P, S)$  for  $f$ , Bob erases the smallest element  $x$  from  $S$  to get a set  $S^*$  of size  $m-1$ . Now Alice and Bob choose, using their public coin, a random permutation  $\pi$  of  $\{1, \dots, n\}$ . Bob applies  $\pi$  to  $S^*$  to get a set  $S'$ . Alice applies the same permutation  $\pi$  to the elements of  $P$ . In addition, she permutes the order of the  $m$  pairs using another random permutation  $\tau$ . Denote by  $P'$  the resulting list of pairs (so far there was no communication). Alice and Bob run the protocol  $\mathcal{P}_{M'}$  on  $(P', S')$  and get some output  $i$ . Finally, Bob sends the element removed,  $x$ , to Alice ( $\log n$  bits),

who outputs 1 if  $\pi(x)$  belongs to the  $i$ -th pair of  $P'$  and 0 otherwise. For the analysis, consider two cases:

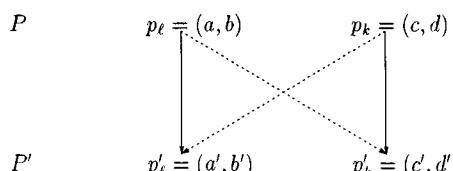
If  $f(P, S) = 1$ , this means that each pair of  $P$  contains exactly one element of  $S$ . Therefore, when  $x$  is omitted from  $S$ , there is exactly one pair in  $P$  that does not contain an element of  $S$ . After applying  $\pi$  and  $\tau$  to  $P$ , there is still exactly one pair  $p'_i$  of  $P'$  that contains no element of  $S'$  (and  $\pi(x) \in p'_i$ ). Therefore, the output of the protocol  $\mathcal{P}_{M'}$  must be this  $i$ , which implies that in this case Bob *always* outputs the correct answer (that is, 1). (Note that in this case permuting the elements neither helps nor hurts.)

If  $f(P, S) = 0$ , this means that there is at least one pair in  $P$ , say  $p_k$ , that does not contain an element of  $S$ . Also, in this case some of the elements of  $S$  are not among the  $2m$  elements of  $P$ . If  $x$  is such an element, then obviously  $\pi(x)$  is not in the  $i$ -th pair found by the protocol  $\mathcal{P}_{M'}$  and so  $\mathcal{P}_f$  always computes the correct answer (that is, 0). The difficult case is when  $x$  is an element of some pair  $p_\ell$ . In such a case there are at least two pairs in  $P'$  – the images of  $p_k$  and  $p_\ell$  – that contain no element of  $S'$ . We use this fact to prove that with probability at least  $1/2$  the protocol for  $M'$  outputs a pair that does not contain  $\pi(x)$ . For this, we associate, in a  $1 - 1$  manner, with each pair of permutations  $\pi, \sigma$  another pair  $\pi', \sigma'$  under that we get the same  $(P', S')$  but  $\pi(x)$  and  $\pi'(x)$  are in different pairs of  $P'$ . Hence, because the permutations are chosen at random, no matter what the output  $i$  on  $(P', S')$  is, with probability at least  $1/2$  the element  $\pi(x)$  is not in the  $i$ -th pair. For this, let  $p'_\ell = (a', b')$  be the image of  $p_\ell = (a, b)$  under  $\pi, \sigma$  and, similarly,  $p'_k = (c', d')$  is the image of  $p_k = (c, d)$ . Let  $\pi'$  be identical to  $\pi$  except that  $\pi'(a) = c', \pi'(b) = d', \pi'(c) = a'$  and  $\pi'(d) = b'$ , and  $\tau'$  be identical to  $\tau$  except that  $\tau'(\ell) = k'$  and  $\tau'(k) = \ell'$  (see Figure 5.2). Under  $\pi$  and  $\tau$  we get  $\pi(x) \in p'_\ell$ , whereas under  $\pi'$  and  $\tau'$  we get  $\pi'(x) \in p'_k$ , as desired.  $\square$

Finally, we show,

**Lemma 5.15:**  $R_{1/4}^{pub}(\text{DISJ}) \leq R_{1/4}^{pub}(f)$ , where DISJ is the disjointness function for inputs in  $\{0, 1\}^m \times \{0, 1\}^m$ .

**PROOF:** We show how to use a protocol  $\mathcal{P}_f$  for  $f$  to compute the function DISJ with the same communication complexity and the same error probability. Alice on input  $x \in \{0, 1\}^m$  constructs a set  $P$  of  $m$  pairs as follows: for every  $i$  ( $1 \leq i \leq m$ ) the set  $P$  includes the pair  $p_i = (3i - x_i - 1, 3i)$ . Bob on input  $y \in \{0, 1\}^m$  constructs a set  $S$  of size  $m$  as follows: for every  $i$  ( $1 \leq i \leq m$ ) the set  $S$  includes the element  $s_i = 3i - y_i$  (that is, both  $p_i$  and  $s_i$  are chosen from  $\{3i - 2, 3i - 1, 3i\}$ ). Alice and Bob execute  $\mathcal{P}_f$  on  $(P, S)$ .



**Figure 5.2:** The permutations  $\pi$  and  $\tau$  (solid lines) have the same image as the permutations  $\pi'$  and  $\tau'$  (dashed lines)

If  $\text{DISJ}(x, y) = 0$  (that is, the sets  $x$  and  $y$  are not disjoint), then there exists  $i$  such that  $x_i = y_i = 1$ . For such  $i$ , the list  $P$  includes the pair  $p_i = (3i - 2, 3i)$ , whereas  $S$  includes the element  $s_i = 3i - 1$  (clearly, for  $j \neq i$ ,  $s_j$  is not an element of  $p_i$ ). Therefore,  $p_i$  contains no element of  $S$  and the value of  $f$  in this case is 0. On the other hand, if  $\text{DISJ}(x, y) = 1$ , then the sets  $x$  and  $y$  are not intersecting. Hence, for all  $i$  either  $y_i = 0$  or  $y_i = 1$  and  $x_i = 0$ . Therefore, after the transformation, for all  $i$  either  $s_i = 3i$ , in which case obviously the pair  $p_i$  contains an element from  $S$ , or  $S$  contains the element  $s_i = 3i - 1$  and so does  $p_i$ . Therefore, all pairs in  $P$  contain elements of  $S$  so the value of  $f$  is 1. Hence, the success probability of the protocol for  $\text{DISJ}$  equals the success probability of  $\mathcal{P}_f$ , as desired.  $\square$

By Example 3.22, the randomized communication complexity of the function  $\text{DISJ}$  is  $\Omega(m)$  and because the difference between the public coin complexity and the private coin complexity is at most  $O(\log m)$ , then also  $R_{1/4}^{\text{pub}}(\text{DISJ}) = \Omega(m)$ . All together we get,

$$D(M) \geq D(M') = \Omega(R_{1/4}^{\text{pub}}(f) - \log m) = \Omega(R_{1/4}^{\text{pub}}(\text{DISJ}) - \log m) = \Omega(m).$$

### 5.3. The FORK Relation

The following lower bound does not reduce relations to functions but rather gives a direct proof using the properties of the specific relation.

Let  $\Sigma$  be an alphabet consisting of  $w$  letters, say  $\{1, \dots, w\}$ . Let  $\text{FORK}$  be the relation consisting of all triples  $(x, y, i)$  such that  $x, y \in \Sigma^\ell$  and  $i$  is such that  $x_i = y_i$  and  $x_{i+1} \neq y_{i+1}$ . To simplify things, we think of  $x$  and  $y$  as having also a 0-coordinate in that  $x_0 = y_0 = 1$  and an  $\ell + 1$  coordinate in which  $x_{\ell+1} = w$  and  $y_{\ell+1} = w - 1$ . This in particular implies that for all  $x$  and  $y$  there exists an index  $i$  such that  $(x, y, i) \in \text{FORK}$ . For example, let  $w = 3$ ,  $x = 231213$ , and  $y = 321223$ , then  $\text{FORK}(x, y, i)$  is satisfied for  $i = 0, 4, 6$ .

**Exercise 5.16:** Prove that  $D(\text{FORK}) = O(\log \ell \log w)$ .

Our goal is to show that this upper bound is tight. For  $0 \leq \alpha \leq 1$ , we say that a protocol is an  $(\alpha, \ell)$  protocol if there exists a set  $S \subseteq \Sigma^\ell$  of size  $|S| \geq \alpha \cdot w^\ell$  such that the protocol succeeds in solving  $\text{FORK}$  whenever  $x, y \in S$ . That is, there is a fraction  $\alpha$  of the strings of size  $\ell$  for that the protocol works correctly. With this terminology, a deterministic protocol for  $\text{FORK}$  is just a  $(1, \ell)$  protocol. The proof of the lower bound is by a series of transformations. The first kind of transformations actually holds for any relation.

**Lemma 5.17:** *If there exists a  $c$ -bit  $(\alpha, \ell)$  protocol for the relation  $\text{FORK}$ , then there is also a  $c - 1$ -bit  $(\alpha/2, \ell)$  protocol for  $\text{FORK}$ .*

**PROOF:** Assume without loss of generality that Alice sends the first bit in the  $(\alpha, \ell)$  protocol  $\mathcal{P}$ . Let  $S$  be the set guaranteed by the  $(\alpha, \ell)$  property, let  $S_0 \subseteq S$  be those

strings in  $S$  for that Alice sends 0 as the first bit, and similarly let  $S_1 \subseteq S$  be those strings in  $S$  for that Alice sends 1 as the first bit. Let  $S_\sigma$  be the larger of the two sets, that is  $|S_\sigma| \geq |S|/2$ . Let  $\mathcal{P}'$  work like  $\mathcal{P}$  but without sending the first bit, and the players assuming that this value is  $\sigma$ . Then,  $\mathcal{P}'$  is a  $c - 1$ -bit ( $\alpha/2, \ell$ ) protocol for FORK.  $\square$

The main tool will be the following “amplification” lemma, that allows us, using an  $(\alpha, \ell)$  protocol, to construct another protocol that works for shorter strings (of length  $\ell/2$ ) but with a larger fraction of successful pairs. More precisely:

**Lemma 5.18:** *Let  $\alpha \geq \lambda/w$  (for a large enough constant  $\lambda$ ). If there exists a  $c$ -bit  $(\alpha, \ell)$  protocol for FORK, then there is also a  $c$ -bit  $(\sqrt{\alpha}/2, \ell/2)$  protocol for it.*

The proof uses the following technical claim:

**Claim 5.19:** *Consider an  $n \times n$  0 – 1 matrix. Let  $m$  be the number of 1s in it, and  $m_i$  be the number of 1s in the  $i$ -th row. Denote by  $\alpha = m/n^2$  the fraction of 1-entries in the matrix and by  $\alpha_i = m_i/n$  the fraction of the 1-entries in the  $i$ -th row. Then, either (a) there is some row  $i$  with  $\alpha_i \geq \sqrt{\alpha/2}$  or (b) the number of rows for that  $\alpha_i \geq \alpha/2$  is at least  $\sqrt{\alpha/2} \cdot n$ .*

**PROOF (OF CLAIM):** Intuitively, the claim says that either one of the rows is “very dense” or there are a lot of rows that are “pretty dense.” Consider  $\sum_{i=1}^n \alpha_i$ . On one hand,  $\sum_{i=1}^n \alpha_i = \sum_{i=1}^n m_i/n = m/n = \alpha \cdot n$ . On the other hand, suppose both (a) and (b) do not hold. This means that for all rows  $\alpha_i < \sqrt{\alpha/2}$  and that for less than  $\sqrt{\alpha/2} \cdot n$  rows  $\alpha_i \geq \alpha/2$ . Therefore,

$$\sum_{i=1}^n \alpha_i < (\sqrt{\alpha/2} \cdot n) \cdot \sqrt{\alpha/2} + n \cdot \alpha/2 = \alpha n.$$

A contradiction.  $\square$

**PROOF (OF LEMMA 5.18):** Let  $S$  be the set corresponding to the  $(\alpha, \ell)$  protocol. Consider a matrix whose rows and columns correspond to strings in  $\Sigma^{\ell/2}$  and whose  $(u, v)$  entry contains 1 if the string  $u \circ v$  is in  $S$  and 0 otherwise. Note that by the assumptions on  $S$  the density of 1s in the matrix is at least  $\alpha$ . Applying the claim to this matrix, we get that it satisfies either (a) or (b). For each of the two cases we construct the desired  $c$ -bit  $(\sqrt{\alpha}/2, \ell/2)$  protocol. In case (a) there exists a row, corresponding to some string  $u$ , whose density is at least  $\sqrt{\alpha/2}$ . The new protocol works as follows: on input  $x, y \in \Sigma^{\ell/2}$  Alice and Bob use the original  $c$ -bit protocol on the length- $\ell$  strings  $u \circ x$  and  $u \circ y$  (and subtract  $\ell/2$  from the output). Because the same string  $u$  is concatenated to both  $x$  and  $y$ , then the output of the protocol is guaranteed to be in the second half of the string. The protocol succeeds whenever the entries corresponding to  $x$  and  $y$  (in row  $u$ ) contain 1. The fraction of strings with this property is at least  $\sqrt{\alpha/2} > \sqrt{\alpha}/2$ , as needed.

In case (b) we need to do something else: Let  $S'$  be the set of all rows with density at least  $\alpha/2$ . We will find two functions  $f, g : \Sigma^{\ell/2} \rightarrow \Sigma^{\ell/2}$  and a set  $S'' \subseteq S'$  such that the following properties hold:

1. for all  $x \in S'', x \circ f(x) \in S$ ,

2. for all  $y \in S''$ ,  $y \circ g(y) \in S$ ,
3. for all  $x, y \in S''$ , the strings  $f(x)$  and  $g(y)$  are different in all coordinates, and
4.  $S''$  contains  $\sqrt{\alpha}/2$  of the strings in  $\Sigma^{\ell/2}$ .

Assuming that such functions exist, the new protocol works as follows: on input  $x, y \in \Sigma^{\ell/2}$  Alice and Bob use the original  $c$ -bit protocol on the length- $\ell$  strings  $x \circ f(x)$  and  $y \circ g(y)$  (each player can modify its own input). By property (3), for all  $x$  and  $y$  in  $S''$  the output of the protocol is guaranteed to be in the first half of the string, and therefore the protocol succeeds. By property (4) (combined with (1) and (2)), this is a  $(\sqrt{\alpha}/2, \ell/2)$  protocol.

It remains to prove the existence of such  $f$ ,  $g$ , and  $S''$ . Consider  $\ell/2$  subsets  $A_i$  of  $\Sigma$  where each  $A_i$  is of size  $w/2$ . If we guarantee that  $f(x)$  is a string in  $A = A_1 \times \dots \times A_{\ell/2}$  and  $g(y)$  is a string in  $B = \bar{A}_1 \times \dots \times \bar{A}_{\ell/2}$ , then property (3) immediately holds. So it remains to show that there exist such sets for that the other properties also hold. The idea is to choose each of the  $A_i$ 's at random and to show that this happens with non-zero probability. To simplify the analysis we choose the  $A_i$ 's as follows: We first choose at random  $w/2$  strings  $v^1, \dots, v^{w/2}$  each of length  $\ell/2$ . Then we define  $A_i$  to include the  $i$ -th letter in each of these  $w/2$  strings and extend it into a set of size  $w/2$  randomly. (Note that this indeed gives random and independent  $A_i$ 's.) Now, fix  $x \in S'$ . We wish to compute the probability that it has an extension  $f(x) \in A$  such that  $x \circ f(x) \in S$ . It is enough to show that with high probability one of the vectors  $v_j$  is such an extension. This is because the probability that none of the vectors is good is smaller than  $(1 - \alpha/2)^{w/2} < e^{-\alpha w/4}$ . Therefore, the probability that either  $A$  or the corresponding  $B$  (that also consists of  $\ell/2$  sets each of size  $w/2$ ) are not good is at most  $2e^{-\alpha w/4}$ . In other words, for every  $x \in S'$  a fraction of  $1 - 2e^{-\alpha w/4}$  of the partitions  $(A, B)$  is good. Hence, there is a partition that is good for  $1 - 2e^{-\alpha w/4}$  of the elements of  $S'$ . Let  $S''$  be this set of elements. The fraction of elements in  $S''$  is  $(1 - 2e^{-\alpha w/4}) \cdot \sqrt{\alpha/2}$ , which is at least  $\sqrt{\alpha}/2$ , as long as  $\alpha \geq \lambda/w$  (for some constant  $\lambda$ ).  $\square$

We get:

**Corollary 5.20:**  $D(\text{FORK}) = \Omega(\log \ell \log w)$ .

**PROOF:** Denote by  $c(\alpha, \ell)$  the number of bits required by an  $(\alpha, \ell)$  protocol for **FORK**. Clearly,  $c(1, \ell) \geq c(1/w^{1/3}, \ell)$  so it is enough to prove that  $c(1/w^{1/3}, \ell) = \Omega(\log \ell \log w)$ . By applying Lemma 5.17  $\Theta(\log w)$  times,  $c(1/w^{1/3}, \ell) \geq \Omega(\log w) + c(1/w^{2/3}, \ell)$ . By Lemma 5.18,  $c(1/w^{2/3}, \ell) \geq c(1/w^{1/3}, \ell/2)$ , hence  $c(1/w^{1/3}, \ell) \geq \Omega(\log w) + c(1/w^{1/3}, \ell/2)$ . Using this inductively  $\Theta(\log \ell)$  times, we get  $c(1/w^{1/3}, \ell) \geq \Omega(\log \ell \log w)$ .  $\square$

**Exercise 5.21:** Let **FORK'** be the relation consisting of all triples  $(x, y, i)$  such that  $x, y \in \Sigma^\ell$  and  $i$  is such that  $x_i = y_i$  and either  $x_{i+1} \neq y_{i+1}$  or  $x_{i-1} \neq y_{i-1}$ . Prove that  $D(\text{FORK}') = \Omega(\log \ell \log w)$ .

## 5.4. Bibliographic Notes

The generalization of communication complexity to the case of relations was initiated by [Karchmer and Wigderson 1988]. Their motivation was the connection between the communication complexity of a certain type of relations and the complexity of Boolean circuits. We will discuss this application of communication complexity in Chapter 10. For an excellent text on this topic see [Karchmer 1989]. In particular, Karchmer and Wigderson proved the bounds for the universal relation  $U$  and the relation  $R_{\oplus}$ . The pair-disjointness relation (Section 5.2) was analyzed by [Raz and Wigderson 1990]. The relation  $\text{FORK}$  was analyzed by [Gringi and Sipser 1991]. Again, the motivation for these papers was also proving lower bounds on the depth of (monotone) Boolean circuits. The direct-sum problem with respect to relations was discussed in [Karchmer et al. 1991]. The problem of computing the Hamming distance exactly, mentioned in Exercise 5.6, was considered in [Pang and El-Gamal 1986].

## Cambridge Books Online

<http://ebooks.cambridge.org/>



Communication Complexity

Eyal Kushilevitz, Noam Nisan

Book DOI: <http://dx.doi.org/10.1017/CBO9780511574948>

Online ISBN: 9780511574948

Hardback ISBN: 9780521560672

Paperback ISBN: 9780521029834

## Chapter

6 - Multiparty Communication Complexity pp. 83-96

Chapter DOI: <http://dx.doi.org/10.1017/CBO9780511574948.007>

Cambridge University Press

# CHAPTER 6

## Multiparty Communication Complexity

---

It is very natural to generalize the two-party model of communication complexity to more than two parties. The obvious generalization that we may imagine is to let  $k$  players evaluate a  $k$ -argument function  $f(x_1, \dots, x_k)$ , where the  $i$ -th player only knows the  $i$ -th argument,  $x_i$ . The exact form of communication between the  $k$  players should be specified somehow. For example, we can assume that every message by any one of the players is seen by all the others (that is, a broadcast).

This model is in a sense weaker than the two-party model, because the input is distributed among more players and hence evaluating functions may be more difficult. Therefore, it should not be surprising that the techniques we already have from the two-party model are strong enough to prove good lower bounds in this model.

**Exercise 6.1:** Let  $x_1, \dots, x_k$  each be an  $n$ -bit string. Define the generalized equality function  $\text{EQ}_n^k(x_1, \dots, x_k)$  to be 1 iff all  $k$  strings are equal, and the generalized nonequality function  $\text{NE}_n^k(x_1, \dots, x_k)$  to be 1 iff all  $k$  strings are distinct ( $\text{EQ}_n^k$  and  $\text{NE}_n^k$  are complements only for  $k = 2$ ). Use reductions from the two-party model to show that if player  $i$  knows only  $x_i$ , then the communication complexity of  $\text{EQ}_n^k$  is  $\Theta(n)$  and the communication complexity of  $\text{NE}_n^k$  is  $\Theta(kn)$ .

In what follows we will be interested in a different model, which is stronger than the above model. The main new ingredient that this model captures is the *overlap of information*. Each part of the input will be known by many of the players. Because this model is stronger than the two-party model, we will require stronger tools to prove lower bounds. On the other hand, these lower bounds will teach us new things on the nature of communication and will have more applications.

### 6.1. The “Number on the Forehead” Model

Let  $f(x_1, \dots, x_k)$  be a Boolean function whose input is  $k$  arguments each  $n$ -bit long. There are  $k$  parties, denoted  $P_1, \dots, P_k$ , each having unlimited computational power, who wish to collaboratively evaluate  $f$ . The twist in this model is the large overlap of

information: The  $i$ -th party knows *all* the input arguments *except*  $x_i$ . In other words,  $x_i$  is known to all parties but  $P_i$ . It is convenient to imagine the  $i$ -th party having  $x_i$  written on his forehead – observed by all players but himself.

The communication between the parties is by “writing on a blackboard” (broadcast): any bit sent by any party is seen by all others. They exchange messages according to a fixed protocol. The protocol must specify the following information for each possible sequence of bits that is written on the board so far:

- Whether the run is over. If the run is over then the protocol should also specify the value computed by the protocol. This should be completely determined by the information written on the board.
- If the run is not over then the protocol should specify which party writes the next bit; this as well should be completely determined by the information written on the board so far.
- What that party writes: this should be a function of the information written on the board so far and of the parts of the input that the party knows.

**Definition 6.2:** *The cost of a protocol is the number of bits written on the board for the worst case input. The multiparty (deterministic) communication complexity of  $f$ ,  $D(f)$ , is the minimal cost of a protocol that computes  $f$ .*

As in the two-party case, the definition of multiparty protocols is clearly equivalent to protocol trees, where the internal nodes may query functions depending on at most  $k - 1$  of the  $x_i$ s, and the leaves hold the value computed. The cost of the protocol is the depth of the protocol tree. Obviously, for every function  $f$ ,  $D(f) \leq n + 1$  (say,  $P_1$  writes on the board  $x_2$ , and  $P_2$ , which now knows all the  $k$  parts of the input, computes  $f(x_1, \dots, x_k)$ ). The following examples show that the overlap of information may be very useful.

- **Example 6.3:** Consider the function  $\text{EQ}_n^k$  from Exercise 6.1. We show that for  $k \geq 3$ ,  $D(\text{EQ}_n^k) = 2$ . In contrast, for  $k = 2$ ,  $D(\text{EQ}_n^2) = D(\text{EQ}) = n + 1$  (Example 1.21). Player  $P_1$  sends a single bit indicating whether  $x_2 = x_3 = \dots = x_k$  and Player  $P_2$  sends a single bit indicating whether  $x_1 = x_3$ . Both tests succeed if and only if all  $x_i$ s are equal to each other.
- **Example 6.4:** For bits  $a, b, c$  denote by  $\text{MAJ}(a, b, c)$  their majority. Consider the 3-argument function  $\text{MIP}$  defined on  $(\{0, 1\}^n)^3$  as follows:

$$\text{MIP}(x_1, x_2, x_3) = \sum_{i=1}^n \text{MAJ}(x_{1,i}, x_{2,i}, x_{3,i}) (\text{mod } 2).$$

This may seem like a generalization of the inner product function  $\text{IP}$  (Example 1.25) to three vectors (and three parties), where we take the bitwise majority. However, while  $\text{IP}$  has high communication complexity, we get  $D(\text{MIP}) = 3$ . To see this, note that

$$\text{MAJ}(a, b, c) = ab + ac + bc \ (\text{mod } 2),$$

thus

$$\text{MIP}(x_1, x_2, x_3) = \sum_{i=1}^n x_{1,i}x_{2,i} + \sum_{i=1}^n x_{1,i}x_{3,i} + \sum_{i=1}^n x_{2,i}x_{3,i} \ (\text{mod } 2).$$

The value of each of these three terms can be computed by one of the three parties alone and communicated to the rest using one bit of communication.

In this chapter we present the known lower bounds on multiparty communication complexity of explicit functions. It is quite interesting that in most of these examples there are also surprising upper bounds that we also present. Note that lower bounds for nonexplicit functions can be easily proven:

**Exercise 6.5:** Prove that for most Boolean functions  $f: (\{0,1\}^n)^k \rightarrow \{0,1\}$ ,  $D(f) = \Omega(n)$ . Hint: Count the number of protocols of a given cost.

## 6.2. Cylinder Intersections

In two-party communication complexity the main objects of study are rectangles—these are the pieces into which a protocol partitions the space of inputs. These objects are obtained by the fact that each message sent by a player depends on his input only. The analogous objects for multiparty complexity are “cylinder intersections,” which are obtained by the fact that each message sent by a player depends on  $k - 1$  of the inputs.

**Definition 6.6:** Let  $X_i$  be the set of possible values for  $x_i$ . A subset  $S \subseteq X_1 \times \dots \times X_k$  is called a cylinder in the  $i$ -th dimension, if membership in  $S$  does not depend on the  $i$ -th coordinate. That is, for all  $x_1, \dots, x_{i-1}, x_i, x_{i+1}, \dots, x_k$  and  $x'_i$ ,

$$(x_1, \dots, x_{i-1}, x_i, x_{i+1}, \dots, x_k) \in S \Leftrightarrow (x_1, \dots, x_{i-1}, x'_i, x_{i+1}, \dots, x_k) \in S.$$

A subset  $S$  is called a cylinder intersection if it can be represented as an intersection of  $k$  cylinders, that is  $S = \bigcap_{i=1}^k S_i$ , where  $S_i$  is a cylinder in the  $i$ -th dimension.

Figure 6.1 shows a cylinder (for  $k = 3$ ). As is shown below, cylinder intersections play a central role in the analysis of multiparty protocols. The following definition gives us a different way to look at cylinder intersections.

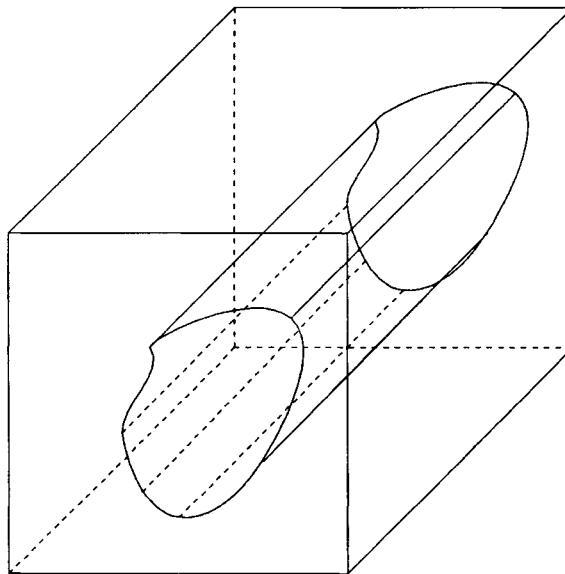
**Definition 6.7:** A star in  $X_1 \times \dots \times X_k$  is a set of  $k$  points of the form:

$$(x'_1, x_2, \dots, x_k), (x_1, x'_2, \dots, x_k), \dots, (x_1, x_2, \dots, x'_k),$$

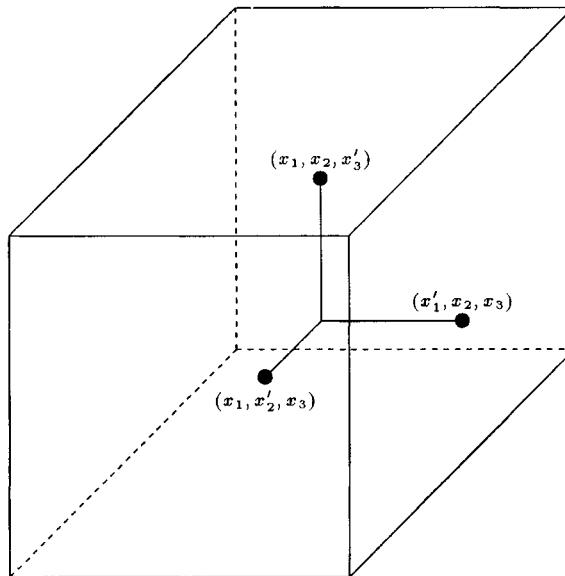
where for each  $i$ ,  $x_i \neq x'_i$  and  $x_i, x'_i \in X_i$ . The point  $(x_1, x_2, \dots, x_k)$  is called the center of the star (the center does not belong to the star).

An example of a star (for  $k = 3$ ) is shown in Figure 6.2. The star consists of the 3 points  $(x'_1, x_2, x_3)$ ,  $(x_1, x'_2, x_3)$  and  $(x_1, x_2, x'_3)$ . Its center,  $(x_1, x_2, x_3)$ , is not part of the star. The following lemma connects the notion of star to the notion of cylinder intersection.

**Lemma 6.8:** A set  $S$  is a cylinder intersection iff for every star that it contains it also contains its center.



**Figure 6.1:** A cylinder



**Figure 6.2:** A star with center  $(x_1, x_2, x_3)$

PROOF: (Only if): Let  $S$  be a cylinder intersection. That is,  $S = \bigcap_i S_i$ , and  $S_i$  a cylinder in the  $i$ -th dimension. Assume that  $S$  contains a star

$$(x'_1, x_2, \dots, x_k), (x_1, x'_2, \dots, x_k), \dots, (x_1, x_2, \dots, x'_k).$$

Thus, for each  $i$ ,  $(x_1, \dots, x'_i, \dots, x_k) \in S \subseteq S_i$ . Since membership in  $S_i$  does not depend on the  $i$ -th coordinate, also  $(x_1, \dots, x_i, \dots, x_k) \in S_i$ . Thus, the center of the star  $(x_1, \dots, x_i, \dots, x_k)$  belongs to  $\bigcap_i S_i = S$ .

(If): Define the set

$$S_i = \{(x_1, \dots, x_i, \dots, x_k) | \exists x'_i \in X_i (x_1, \dots, x'_i, \dots, x_k) \in S\}.$$

By its definition,  $S_i$  is a cylinder in the  $i$ -th dimension. We will show that if  $S$  contains the center of every star it contains then  $S = \bigcap_i S_i$ . One direction, that  $S \subseteq \bigcap_i S_i$  is immediate from the definition (it is true for any  $S$  and not only  $S$  with the “star property”). For the other direction, consider a point  $(x_1, \dots, x_i, \dots, x_k) \in \bigcap_i S_i$ . Then, for each  $i$ , by the definition of  $S_i$ , there exists  $x'_i$  such that  $(x_1, \dots, x'_i, \dots, x_k) \in S$ . But this set of  $k$  points is a star contained in  $S$ , and thus its center,  $(x_1, \dots, x_i, \dots, x_k)$  is also in  $S$ .  $\square$

**Lemma 6.9:** Fix a  $k$ -party protocol  $\mathcal{P}$  and consider a leaf  $\ell$  of the protocol tree. Then, the set  $R_\ell$ , of inputs that reach this leaf, is a cylinder intersection.

PROOF: As in the two-party case (Proposition 1.14), we can prove by induction, using the first definition, that the set of inputs reaching a node of the protocol tree is indeed a cylinder intersection. Again, it is perhaps more instructive to consider a proof that uses the second definition.

Fix a star in  $R_\ell$ . That is,  $k$  points such that for every  $i$ ,  $(x_1, \dots, x'_i, \dots, x_k) \in R_\ell$ . We will show that its center,  $(x_1, \dots, x_i, \dots, x_k)$  is also in  $R_\ell$ . That is, we need to show that on input  $(x_1, \dots, x_i, \dots, x_k)$  the protocol still reaches the same leaf  $\ell$ . At each step, the party that needs to send the next message, say  $P_i$ , cannot distinguish between the input  $(x_1, \dots, x_i, \dots, x_k)$  and the input  $(x_1, \dots, x'_i, \dots, x_k)$ , because he does not see the  $i$ -th part of the input. Thus,  $P_i$  will send the same message in both cases. Hence the whole communication on the center is the same as on all elements of the star, as needed.  $\square$

We can now summarize this section by:

**Lemma 6.10:** Any  $c$ -bit multiparty protocol for  $f$  partitions  $X_1 \times \dots \times X_k$  into at most  $2^c$   $f$ -monochromatic cylinder intersections.

### 6.3. Bounds Using Ramsey Theory

In this section we present a lower bound technique for multiparty communication complexity that is based on Ramsey theory.

- **Example 6.11:** For an  $n$ -bit integer  $N$  let the exactly- $N$  function,  $E_N^k(x_1, \dots, x_k)$ , be 1 iff  $\sum_{i=1}^k x_i = N$ , where the inputs,  $x_1, \dots, x_k$ , are each an  $n$ -bit integer in  $\{1, \dots, N\}$ . To analyze the communication complexity of the function  $E_N^k$ , we use the Ramsey number,  $\xi_k(N)$ , defined next:  $\xi_k(N)$  is the smallest number of colors needed to color  $\{1, \dots, N\}^{k-1}$  such that for all vectors  $(x_1, \dots, x_{k-1})$  and for all integers  $\lambda \neq 0$ , if the  $k$  vectors

$$\begin{aligned} & (x_1, \dots, x_{k-1}), \\ & (x_1 + \lambda, x_2, \dots, x_{k-1}), \\ & (x_1, x_2 + \lambda, \dots, x_{k-1}), \\ & \vdots \\ & (x_1, x_2, \dots, x_{k-1} + \lambda) \end{aligned}$$

are all in  $\{1, \dots, N\}^{k-1}$ , then not all of them are colored with the same color (see, for example, [Graham et al. 1990, Section 2.3]).

For an upper bound, we present a protocol with communication complexity of  $O(k + \log \xi_k(N))$ . Fix a proper coloring of  $\{1, \dots, N\}^{k-1}$  with  $\xi_k(N)$  many colors. Now, for  $1 \leq i \leq k-1$ , player  $P_i$  first computes  $x'_i = N - \sum_{j \neq i} x_j$  (that is,  $x'_i$  is the number that together with the  $k-1$  parts of the input that  $P_i$  sees would make the sum exactly  $N$ ). If  $x'_i \leq 0$ , then  $P_i$  already knows that the sum is larger than  $N$ . In this case he can already output 0. Otherwise,  $P_i$  computes the color with which the vector  $(x_1, \dots, x'_i, \dots, x_{k-1})$  is colored. Player  $P_k$  computes the color of the vector  $(x_1, \dots, x_{k-1})$ . The players now compare the  $k$  colors they computed and output 1 iff they are all the same. For doing this, only the first player actually needs to send his color ( $\log \xi_k(N)$  bits) and each of the other players only needs to send a single bit indicating whether or not he has the same color. It remains to prove the correctness of the protocol. If  $\sum_i x_i = N$ , then each of the first  $k-1$  players computes  $x'_i = x_i$  and hence all players compute the color of the same vector (that is,  $(x_1, \dots, x_{k-1})$ ). Therefore, in this case, the output is 1. On the other hand, if  $\sum_i x_i = N - \lambda \neq N$ , then the colors they computed belong to the vectors  $(x_1, \dots, x_{k-1})$  (player  $P_k$ ),  $(x_1 + \lambda, \dots, x_{k-1})$  (player  $P_1$ ), up to  $(x_1, \dots, x_{k-1} + \lambda)$  (player  $P_{k-1}$ ). All these vectors are in  $\{1, \dots, N\}^{k-1}$  therefore, by the legality of the coloring, the colors of these  $k$  vectors are not all the same and so the output in this case is 0.

For a lower bound, we show that  $D(E_N^k) \geq \log \xi_k(\lfloor \frac{N-1}{k-1} \rfloor)$ . For this, we present a legal coloring of  $\{1, \dots, \lfloor \frac{N-1}{k-1} \rfloor\}^{k-1}$  with at most  $L$  colors, where  $L \leq 2^{D(E_N^k)}$  is the number of leaves of the optimal protocol for  $E_N^k$ . The point  $(x_1, \dots, x_{k-1})$  is colored by the name of the leaf reached by the input  $(x_1, \dots, x_{k-1}, N - \sum_{i=1}^{k-1} x_i)$  (for every  $1 \leq i \leq k-1$ , we have  $1 \leq x_i \leq \lfloor \frac{N-1}{k-1} \rfloor$  and therefore the  $k$ -th component of the input is a number in  $\{1, \dots, N\}$  as needed). This coloring is legal, because if there are  $k$  vectors in  $\{1, \dots, \lfloor \frac{N-1}{k-1} \rfloor\}^{k-1}$  of the form

$$\begin{aligned} & (x_1, \dots, x_{k-1}), \\ & (x_1 + \lambda, x_2, \dots, x_{k-1}), \\ & (x_1, x_2 + \lambda, \dots, x_{k-1}), \\ & \vdots \\ & (x_1, x_2, \dots, x_{k-1} + \lambda) \end{aligned}$$

which are colored with the same color, then there exist  $k$  inputs (in  $\{1, \dots, N\}^k$ )

$$\begin{aligned} & \left( x_1, \dots, x_{k-1}, N - \sum_{i=1}^{k-1} x_i \right), \\ & \left( x_1 + \lambda, \dots, x_{k-1}, N - \sum_{i=1}^{k-1} x_i - \lambda \right), \\ & \left( x_1, x_2 + \lambda, \dots, x_{k-1}, N - \sum_{i=1}^{k-1} x_i - \lambda \right), \\ & \vdots \\ & \left( x_1, \dots, x_{k-1} + \lambda, N - \sum_{i=1}^{k-1} x_i - \lambda \right) \end{aligned}$$

which are all in the same 1-monochromatic cylinder intersection. However, such points form a star whose center is  $(x_1, \dots, x_{k-1}, N - \sum_{i=1}^{k-1} x_i - \lambda)$ , hence by the results of Section 6.2 the center also belongs to the same cylinder intersection. But this center has a sum of  $N - \lambda$  and hence it cannot be in the same cylinder intersection. Therefore, the coloring must be legal.

The reader can verify that  $\xi_k(N) \leq k \cdot \xi_k(N/k)$ . Hence, for any fixed  $k$ , we get  $D(E_N^k) = \Theta(\log \xi_k(N))$ . Although this gives an exact characterization of  $D(E_N^k)$ , it is not clear at all what this value is, that is what is the value of  $\xi_k(N)$ . The best lower bound known states that for any fixed  $k$ ,  $\xi_k(N) = \omega(1)$  (see [Graham et al. 1990]), which implies that  $E_N^k$  cannot be computed with a constant number of bits. On the other hand, a surprising upper bound for  $k = 3$  is known:  $\xi_3(N) \leq \exp(\sqrt{\log N} \log \log N)$  [Chandra, Furst, and Lipton 1983]. This implies that  $D(E_N^3) = O(\sqrt{n} \log n)$ . Also note that  $D(E_N^2) = D(\text{EQ}) = n + 1$ .

**Exercise 6.12:** As in the two-party case, we can define the nondeterministic communication complexity of a function as the number of bits that the players need to exchange in order to be convinced that  $f(x_1, \dots, x_k) = 1$ . Similarly, the co-nondeterministic communication complexity of a function is the number of bits that the players need to exchange in order to be convinced that  $f(x_1, \dots, x_k) = 0$ . Prove that the nondeterministic communication complexity of  $E_N^k$ , for every fixed  $k$ , is  $\theta(\log \xi_k(N))$ , whereas the co-nondeterministic complexity is  $\theta(\log \log \xi_k(N))$ .

**Exercise 6.13:** Prove that the randomized communication complexity of  $E_N^k$ , for every fixed  $k$ , is  $\theta(\log \log \xi_k(N))$  in the private coin model and  $\theta(1)$  in the public coin model.

## 6.4. Discrepancy Lower Bound

The basic lower bound techniques we use for the two-party model cannot be used for  $k \geq 3$  parties. The only technique from two-party communication complexity that generalizes to the multiparty case is the discrepancy method (Section 3.5).

**Definition 6.14:** Let  $f : X_1 \times \dots \times X_k \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$  be a function. Let  $\mu$  be a probability distribution on  $X_1 \times \dots \times X_k$ . The discrepancy of  $f$  according to  $\mu$ ,  $\text{Disc}_\mu(f)$ , is

$$\max_S \left| \Pr_\mu[f(x_1, \dots, x_k) = 0 \wedge (x_1, \dots, x_k) \in S] - \Pr_\mu[f(x_1, \dots, x_k) = 1 \wedge (x_1, \dots, x_k) \in S] \right|,$$

where the maximum is taken over all cylinder intersections  $S$ .

As in the two-party case, upper bounds on the discrepancy give lower bounds on the multiparty communication complexity. In fact they even give lower bounds on the randomized complexity.

**Exercise 6.15:** Let  $f$  be a function. For every distribution  $\mu$ ,

1.  $D_{\frac{1}{2}-\epsilon}^\mu(f) \geq \log(2\epsilon/Disc_\mu(f))$ ; and
  2.  $R_{\frac{1}{2}-\epsilon}^\mu(f) \geq \log(2\epsilon/Disc_\mu(f))$ .
- (Obviously this implies  $D(f) = \Omega(\log(1/Disc_\mu(f)))$ .)

Hint: The first part is the analogue of Proposition 3.28, and the second part is obtained from the first part together with the analogue of Theorem 3.20.

In the next subsection we use this exercise to prove a lower bound for a natural generalization of the inner product function, IP. We start with the upper bound for it.

► **Example 6.16:** The  $k$ -wise *generalized inner product* function on  $k$   $n$ -bit strings is defined by  $\text{GIP}_n^k(x_1, \dots, x_k) = 1$  if the number of locations in which all of the  $x_i$ 's have 1 is odd, and 0 otherwise. We show in the next subsection that  $D(\text{GIP}_n^k) = \Omega(n/4^k)$ . This lower bound deteriorates exponentially with  $k$ . The following protocol for  $\text{GIP}_n^k$  shows that at least for this function this is unavoidable.

It is convenient to view the input for  $\text{GIP}_n^k$  as a  $k \times n$  matrix whose rows are  $x_1, \dots, x_k$ . With this view, the task is only to count (modulo 2) the number of  $(1, \dots, 1)$  columns. The protocol goes as follows: the players divide the columns into blocks, each block contains (at most)  $2^{k-1} - 1$  columns. The first observation is that if we compute the  $\text{GIP}_n^k$  with respect to each block, then by summing the results (modulo 2) we get the desired value of  $\text{GIP}_n^k$  with respect to the whole matrix. Consider a specific block. Player  $P_1$  announces a  $k$ -bit vector  $\alpha$  that is not a column in this block. Although  $P_1$  does not know the first row ( $x_1$ ), this is still possible because there are only  $2^{k-1} - 1$  columns that the sees without their first bit, and for each of them he can eliminate both ways to extend them (with 0 or 1). Still, this eliminates at most  $2^k - 2$  of the  $2^k$  combinations.

Now all players know a vector  $\alpha$  that is not a column in the block and they use it to compute the  $\text{GIP}_n^k$  in this block. If  $\alpha = (1, \dots, 1)$  we are done because this implies that  $\text{GIP}_n^k = 0$  (without any communication). Otherwise,  $\alpha$  contains at least one 0. Assume, without loss of generality, that  $\alpha$  is of the form  $(0, \dots, 0, 1, \dots, 1)$ , that is it starts with  $\ell$  0s and then  $k - \ell$  1s (if this is not the case we can permute the indices and the players accordingly). Let  $y_i$  be the number of vectors (in the block) of the form  $(0, \dots, 0, 1, \dots, 1)$ , that is, those that start with  $i$  0s and the rest are 1s. Let  $z_i$  be the number of vectors of the form  $(0, \dots, 0, *, 1, \dots, 1)$ , that is, those that start with  $i - 1$  0s then an arbitrary bit in the  $i$ -th position and the rest are 1s. Each player  $P_i$  ( $1 \leq i \leq \ell$ ) announces the value of  $z_i$ . Note that  $P_i$  has the information needed to do so. Also note that  $z_i = y_{i-1} + y_i$  and that  $y_\ell = 0$  by the assumption that  $\alpha$  does not appear as a column. Hence the players can use the  $z_i$ 's to compute the values of all the  $y_i$ 's and in particular of  $y_0$ , which is the number of  $(1, \dots, 1)$  columns, and hence  $\text{GIP}_n^k$  can be computed for this block.

During this stage the players communicate  $k$  numbers and hence need  $k \log n$  bits. A more careful observation shows that nothing is changed if all calculations are done mod 2, hence  $k$  bits are enough. All together, there are  $O(\frac{n}{2^k})$  blocks, in each of them  $k$  bits are used to communicate  $\alpha$  and  $k$  to compute the  $\text{GIP}_n^k$ , in total  $O(k \cdot \frac{n}{2^k})$  bits.

### 6.4.a. The Discrepancy of GIP

In this subsection we prove a lower bound for GIP by using the discrepancy method. Specifically, we show that  $\text{Disc}_{\text{uniform}}(\text{GIP}_n^k) \leq \exp(-n/4^k)$ .

We first introduce a slightly modified notation to facilitate easier algebraic handling. Define a function  $f$  as follows:  $f(x_1, \dots, x_k)$  is 1 if  $\text{GIP}_n^k(x_1, \dots, x_k) = 0$  and  $-1$  if  $\text{GIP}_n^k(x_1, \dots, x_k) = 1$ . In this case, instead of working directly with the discrepancy we will use:

$$\Delta_k(n) = \max_{\phi_1, \dots, \phi_k} |\mathbb{E}_{x_1, \dots, x_k}[f(x_1, \dots, x_k) \cdot \phi_1(x_1, \dots, x_k) \cdots \phi_k(x_1, \dots, x_k)]|,$$

where the maximum is taken over all functions  $\phi_i : (\{0, 1\}^n)^k \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$  such that  $\phi_i$  does not depend on  $x_i$ , and the expectation is over all  $2^{nk}$  possible choices of  $x_1, \dots, x_k$ .

First, it should be clear that  $\text{Disc}_{\text{uniform}}(\text{GIP}_n^k) = \Delta_k(n)$ . This is because the product  $\phi_1(x_1, \dots, x_k) \cdots \phi_k(x_1, \dots, x_k)$  gives 1 on a collection of points that forms a cylinder intersection, and, conversely, any cylinder intersection can be written as such a product. In addition, because we changed to the  $\{-1, +1\}$  notation, the expectation plays the same role as the difference in probabilities previously did.

We define constants  $\beta_k$  recursively:  $\beta_1 = 0$ , and  $\beta_k = \sqrt{\frac{1+\beta_{k-1}}{2}}$ . It follows by induction that  $\beta_k \leq 1 - 4^{1-k} < e^{-4^{1-k}}$ . We will prove the following upper bound on  $\Delta_k(n)$ .

**Lemma 6.17:**  $\Delta_k(n) \leq (\beta_k)^n$ , for all  $k \geq 1, n \geq 0$ .

**PROOF:** Observe that  $\Delta_1(n) = 0$ , because in this case  $\phi_1$  must be constant and  $\mathbb{E}_{x_1}[f(x_1)] = 0$  (in the case that  $n = 0$ , we get  $\Delta_1(0) = 1$ . To overcome this, we define  $0^0 = 1$  for this proof). We proceed by induction on  $k$ . Let  $k \geq 2$ , and fix  $\phi_1, \dots, \phi_k$  that achieve the value of  $\Delta_k(n)$ . Because  $\phi_k$  does not depend on  $x_k$ , and is bounded in absolute value by 1,

$$\Delta_k(n) \leq \mathbb{E}_{x_1, \dots, x_{k-1}}[|\mathbb{E}_{x_k}[f(x_1, \dots, x_k) \cdot \phi_1(x_1, \dots, x_k) \cdots \phi_{k-1}(x_1, \dots, x_k)]|].$$

In order to estimate the right-hand side, we will use a special case of the Cauchy–Schwartz inequality stating that for any random variable  $z$ :  $(\mathbb{E}[z])^2 \leq \mathbb{E}[z^2]$ . Thus our estimate is:

$$\begin{aligned} \Delta_k(n) &\leq (\mathbb{E}_{x_1, \dots, x_{k-1}}[\mathbb{E}_{x_k}[f(x_1, \dots, x_k) \cdot \phi_1(x_1, \dots, x_k) \cdots \phi_{k-1}(x_1, \dots, x_k)]]^2)^{1/2} \\ &= (\mathbb{E}_{u, v, x_1, \dots, x_{k-1}}[f(x_1, \dots, x_{k-1}, u) \cdot f(x_1, \dots, x_{k-1}, v) \\ &\quad \cdot \phi_1^u \cdot \phi_1^v \cdots \phi_{k-1}^u \cdot \phi_{k-1}^v])^{1/2} \end{aligned}$$

where  $\phi_i^u$  stands for  $\phi_i(x_1, \dots, x_{k-1}, u)$ , and  $\phi_i^v$  for  $\phi_i(x_1, \dots, x_{k-1}, v)$ .

Now observe that for every particular choice of  $u$  and  $v$ , we can express the product  $f(x_1, \dots, x_{k-1}, u) f(x_1, \dots, x_{k-1}, v)$  in terms of the function  $f$  on  $k - 1$  strings of possibly shorter length. Inspection reveals that the value of  $f(x_1, \dots, x_{k-1}, u) f(x_1, \dots, x_{k-1}, v)$  is simply  $f(z_1, \dots, z_{k-1})$ , where  $z_i$  is the restriction of  $x_i$  to the coordinates  $j$  such that  $u_j \neq v_j$  (here is where the particular properties of  $f$  are used). We will now view each  $x_i$  as composed of two parts:  $z_i$  and  $y_i$ , where  $z_i$  is the part of  $x_i$  where  $u_j \neq v_j$ , and  $y_i$  the part of  $x_i$  where  $u_j = v_j$  (this is done separately for every  $u, v$ ).

For every particular choice of  $u, v$  and consequently  $y_1, \dots, y_{k-1}$ , we define functions of the “ $z$ -parts”:

$$\xi_i^{u, v, y_1, \dots, y_{k-1}}(z_1, \dots, z_{k-1}) = \phi_i(x_1, \dots, x_{k-1}, u)\phi_i(x_1, \dots, x_{k-1}, v),$$

where the  $x_i$ s are obtained by the concatenation of the corresponding  $y_i$  and  $z_i$ . We can now rewrite the previous estimate as

$$\Delta_k(n) \leq (\mathbf{E}_{u, v}[\mathbf{E}_{y_1, \dots, y_{k-1}}[S^{u, v, y_1, \dots, y_{k-1}}]])^{1/2},$$

where  $S^{u, v, y_1, \dots, y_{k-1}}$  is defined as

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{E}_{z_1, \dots, z_{k-1}}[f(z_1, \dots, z_{k-1}) \cdot \xi_1^{u, v, y_1, \dots, y_{k-1}}(z_1, \dots, z_{k-1}) \\ \dots \xi_{k-1}^{u, v, y_1, \dots, y_{k-1}}(z_1, \dots, z_{k-1})]. \end{aligned}$$

Now  $S^{u, v, y_1, \dots, y_{k-1}}$  can be estimated via the induction hypothesis, because  $f$  and the  $\xi_i$ s are all functions of  $k - 1$  strings. Moreover, note that  $\xi_i^{u, v, y_1, \dots, y_{k-1}}$  does not depend on  $z_i$ . Thus the previous estimate of  $\Delta_k(n)$  is bounded by

$$\Delta_k(n) \leq (\mathbf{E}_{u, v, y_1, \dots, y_{k-1}}[\Delta_{k-1}(m_{u, v})])^{1/2} \leq (\mathbf{E}_{u, v, y_1, \dots, y_{k-1}}[\beta_{k-1}^{m_{u, v}}])^{1/2},$$

where  $m_{u, v}$  is the length of the strings  $z_i$ , which is equal to the number of locations  $j$  such that  $u_j \neq v_j$ .

Because  $u$  and  $v$  are distributed uniformly in  $\{0, 1\}^n$ ,  $m_{u, v}$  is distributed according to the binomial distribution. For any constant  $m$ , the probability that  $m_{u, v} = m$  is exactly  $\binom{n}{m}2^{-n}$ . Thus the previous estimate gives:

$$\Delta_k(n) \leq \left[ \sum_{m=0}^n \binom{n}{m} 2^{-n} \beta_{k-1}^m \right]^{1/2} = [2^{-n}(1 + \beta_{k-1})^n]^{1/2} = \beta_k^n,$$

which completes the proof of the lemma.  $\square$

To conclude, this shows that  $\text{Disc}_{\text{uniform}}(\text{GIP}_n^k) \leq 1/e^{\frac{n}{4^{k-1}}}$ , which implies that the deterministic (and even randomized) communication complexity of  $\text{GIP}_n^k$  is  $\Omega(n/4^k)$ . In fact, by Exercise 6.15, we also get a bound for  $D_{\frac{1}{2}-\varepsilon}^{\text{uniform}}(f)$  and  $R_{\frac{1}{2}-\varepsilon}(f)$  of  $\Omega(\log \varepsilon + n/4^k)$ .

## 6.5. Simultaneous Protocols

The protocols presented in Examples 6.3 and 6.4 are of a very restricted form: the communication sent by each party does not depend at all on the previous communication sent by other parties. We can imagine all parties speaking “simultaneously” and each writing, on a common blackboard, a function of the  $k - 1$  parts of the input it can see. After all parties have spoken, the answer should be determined by what is written on the blackboard. We call such protocols simultaneous.

**Definition 6.18:** *The simultaneous communication complexity of  $f$ ,  $D^{\parallel}(f)$ , is the cost of the best simultaneous protocol that computes  $f$ .*

**Exercise 6.19:** Show that  $D^{\parallel}(E_N^k) = O(k \cdot \log \xi_k(N))$ , where  $E_N^k$  is the exactly- $N$  function of Example 6.11.

It turns out that simultaneous protocols, although very simple, have surprising power as is shown by the following generalization of Example 6.4.

**Lemma 6.20:** Fix a ring  $R$ . Let  $R[x_{i,j}]$  ( $1 \leq i \leq k, 1 \leq j \leq n$ ) be the set of all polynomials over the ring  $R$  with variables  $x_{i,j}$ . For every polynomial  $p$  in  $R[x_{i,j}]$  of degree at most  $k - 1$ , associate a  $k$ -party communication problem where  $x_i = (x_{i,1}, \dots, x_{i,n})$  (each  $x_{i,j}$  is an element of  $R$ , that is  $\log |R|$ -bit long) and the goal is to evaluate  $p$ . Then  $D^{\parallel}(p) \leq k \log |R|$ .

PROOF: Because  $p$  is of degree at most  $k - 1$ , each monomial of  $p$  contains at most  $k - 1$  variables. Thus, some party can compute the value of this monomial by itself. The protocol will first fix a partition of the monomials of  $p$  into  $k$  sets, with set  $i$  only containing monomials that can be computed by  $P_i$ . Each party will compute all the monomials assigned to it, add them up (in  $R$ ), and write the answer (an element in  $R$  that takes  $\log |R|$  bits) on the blackboard. Clearly, the value of  $p$  can be determined by what is on the blackboard, because this value is just the sum of values written by the  $k$  parties.  $\square$

The power of this lemma will be best appreciated when we consider the complexity class  $ACC^0$  in Section 11.4. This also motivates the following open problem:

**Problems 6.21:** For some explicit function  $f: (\{0,1\}^n)^k \rightarrow \{0,1\}$ , prove a super-logarithmic lower bound on  $D^{\parallel}(f)$  with  $k \geq \log n$  parties.

Recall that in two-party communication complexity proving strong lower bounds for 1-round communication was rather easy (Exercise 4.18). For multiparty communication we can obtain easily only rather weak bounds even for the simultaneous case.

► **Example 6.22:** Let  $A$  be a  $k - 1$  dimensional array of bits, where each dimension has  $n$  entries. For every  $j$  ( $1 \leq j \leq k - 1$ ), let  $i_j$  be an integer  $1 \leq i_j \leq n$ . Thus  $A$  is represented by  $N = n^{k-1}$  bits and each  $i_j$  by  $\log n$  bits. The function  $\text{INDEX}(i_1, i_2, \dots, i_{k-1}, A)$  is defined to be the  $(i_1, \dots, i_{k-1})$ -th entry of  $A$ , that is  $A[i_1, \dots, i_{k-1}]$ .

We will show that  $D^{\parallel}(\text{INDEX}) = \Omega(n/k) = \Omega(N^{1/(k-1)}/k)$  using a reduction to 1-round two-party communication complexity. Let us consider the two-party variant where Alice gets  $A$  and Bob gets all the indices  $i_1, \dots, i_{k-1}$ . This problem is completely equivalent to the one considered in Example 4.19 (on  $N$  bits) and its 1-round (Alice speaks, then Bob can tell the answer) complexity is  $N = n^{k-1}$ . Now, assume that the  $k$ -party version can be solved with cost  $c$ . We will build a 1-round protocol for the two-party case where Alice only sends  $ckn^{k-2}$  bits. Thus,  $ckn^{k-2} \geq n^{k-1}$  and the lower bound on  $c$  follows.

Alice will simulate all the parties except the  $k$ -th party (the one not seeing  $A$ ), that is simulated by Bob. The difficulty is that party  $j$  in the multiparty case has access to all

indices but  $i_j$ , whereas Alice does not. Alice will thus simulate the  $j$ -th party for all possible values of these  $k - 2$  indices. The number of these values is  $n^{k-2}$ . Each possibility requires  $c$  bits of communication, and this should be done for all  $1 \leq j \leq k - 1$ . All together Alice sends  $O(ckn^{k-2})$  bits. Bob knows  $i_1, \dots, i_{k-1}$ , which is all the information required to simulate the  $k$ -th party (he will do so without actually sending the message). In addition, using his information, Bob can also figure out what the real message sent by the simulated  $j$ -th party is. Therefore, he can determine the answer.

**Exercise 6.23:** Prove that  $D(\text{INDEX}) = \theta(\log n)$ . That is,  $k$  parties without the restriction to simultaneous protocols can do better. Hint: For the lower bound generalize Exercise 4.21.

**Problems 6.24:** How big can the gap between  $D(f)$  and  $D^{\text{II}}(f)$  be when  $k \geq \log n$ ?

**Exercise 6.25:** Let  $A$  be an  $n$ -bit string, and  $1 \leq j, i \leq n$ . Define the 3-argument function  $\text{SUM-INDEX}(A, j, i) = A[j \oplus i]$ , where  $\oplus$  denotes bitwise xor. Prove that  $D^{\text{II}}(\text{SUM-INDEX}) = \Omega(\sqrt{n})$ . Hint: Reduction from INDEX.

► **Example 6.26:** Surprisingly, the function SUM-INDEX can be computed with less communication than the obvious  $O(n)$  upper bound. Below is an  $O(n^{0.92})$  protocol for this function.

The first idea is that  $A$  can be thought of as a Boolean function  $A : \{1, \dots, n\} \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$ , instead of a string, by letting  $A(k)$  be the  $k$ -th bit of  $A$ . The second idea is that such a function  $A$  can be written as a multilinear polynomial over  $GF(2)$  in the Boolean variables  $x_1, \dots, x_t$ , where  $t = \log n$ . Let  $k_1, \dots, k_t$  be the binary representation of  $k$ , then to get  $A(k)$  we evaluate the polynomial on the assignment  $x_1 = k_1, \dots, x_t = k_t$ . To see how to get this polynomial, note that for every  $k$  there is a multilinear polynomial  $p_k$  that gets 1 only for the value  $k$ . For example, if  $k = 1010$ , then the polynomial  $p_k$  is obtained by simplifying the expression  $x_1 \cdot (1 - x_2) \cdot x_3 \cdot (1 - x_4)$ . The multilinear polynomial corresponding to  $A$  is obtained as  $A(x) = \sum_{k: A(k)=1} p_k(x)$ . So we can write,  $A(x) = \sum_{S \subseteq \{1, \dots, t\}} a_S \prod_{\ell \in S} x_\ell$ , where each  $a_S$  is a 0-1 coefficient of the corresponding monomial. In this terminology, the players are required to evaluate

$$A(j \oplus i) = \sum_S a_S \prod_{\ell \in S} (j_\ell + i_\ell) = \sum_{S: |S| \leq 2t/3} a_S \prod_{\ell \in S} (j_\ell + i_\ell) + \sum_{S: |S| > 2t/3} a_S \prod_{\ell \in S} (j_\ell + i_\ell),$$

where the motivation for decomposing the sum into two terms will soon become clear. The protocol for SUM-INDEX will work as follows: The player holding both  $j$  and  $i$  writes on the board these two values (this is only  $O(\log n)$  bits). Now note that each player who sees  $A$  knows all the values  $a_S$ . Therefore, if one of these two players broadcasts, all the values  $a_S$ , for  $S$  such that  $|S| > 2t/3$ , then from this communication (and the values of  $j$  and  $i$ , which are already on the board) the second term in the above summation can be computed. This requires  $\sum_{m>\frac{2t}{3}} {}^t m$  bits. The question is how the first term can be computed. Note that if the players write all these coefficients as well, then the

communication will exceed  $2^t = n$  bits, which is not useful. To overcome this difficulty, we manipulate the first term:

$$\begin{aligned}
 \sum_{S:|S|\leq 2t/3} a_S \prod_{\ell \in S} (j_\ell + i_\ell) &= \sum_{S:|S|\leq 2t/3} a_S \sum_{T_1, T_2 : T_1 \cup T_2 = S, T_1 \cap T_2 = \emptyset} \prod_{\ell \in T_1} j_\ell \prod_{\ell \in T_2} i_\ell \\
 &= \sum_{|T_1|+|T_2|\leq 2t/3, T_1 \cap T_2 = \emptyset} a_{T_1 \cup T_2} \prod_{\ell \in T_1} j_\ell \prod_{\ell \in T_2} i_\ell \\
 &= \sum_{T_1:|T_1|\leq t/3} \left( \sum_{T_2:|T_2|\leq 2t/3-|T_1|, T_1 \cap T_2 = \emptyset} a_{T_1 \cup T_2} \prod_{\ell \in T_2} i_\ell \right) \prod_{\ell \in T_1} j_\ell \\
 &\quad + \sum_{T_2:|T_2|\leq t/3} \left( \sum_{T_1:|T_1|/3 < |T_1| \leq 2t/3-|T_2|, T_1 \cap T_2 = \emptyset} a_{T_1 \cup T_2} \prod_{\ell \in T_1} j_\ell \right) \prod_{\ell \in T_2} i_\ell.
 \end{aligned}$$

Therefore, we get a sum of two terms. The first term can be considered as a polynomial in  $j$ , whose coefficients are known to the player holding  $A$  and  $i$ , whereas the second term is a polynomial in  $i$ , whose coefficients are known to the player holding  $A$  and  $j$ . Each of these two players writes on the board all the coefficients of the corresponding polynomial ( $\sum_{m=0}^{t/3} \binom{t}{m}$  bits). Hence, we get a *simultaneous* protocol, such that the value of  $A(j \oplus i)$  can be computed from its communication. The communication complexity of this protocol is

$$\begin{aligned}
 2t + \sum_{m>\frac{2t}{3}}^t \binom{t}{m} + 2 \sum_{m=0}^{t/3} \binom{t}{m} &< 2t + 3 \sum_{m=0}^{t/3} \binom{t}{m} \\
 &= 2t + O\left(\frac{2^{tH(1/3)}}{\sqrt{t}}\right) \\
 &= 2 \log n + O\left(\frac{n^{H(1/3)}}{\sqrt{\log n}}\right),
 \end{aligned}$$

where  $H$  denotes the entropy function. Since  $H(1/3) = 0.918, \dots$ , this is  $O(n^{0.92})$ .

**Problems 6.27:** Does there exist a protocol for SUM-INDEX where two parties are allowed to send  $\text{poly}-\log(n)$  bits each, and the third  $o(n)$ ? See Section 11.3 for motivation.

## 6.6. Bibliographic Notes

Several models for multiparty communication were introduced in the literature. See for example [Dolev and Feder 1989]. The “Number on the Forehead” model was presented by [Chandra, Furst, and Lipton 1983]. The notion of cylinder intersection was defined in the work of [Babai, Nisan, and Szegedy 1989]. The notion of star is from [Chandra et al. 1983]. The Ramsey technique for proving lower bounds is due to [Chandra et al. 1983] (for an excellent introduction to Ramsey theory see [Graham et al. 1983]. The lower bound for GIP is due to [Babai et al. 1989]. It was later improved by [Chung and

Tetali 1993], who proved a lower bound of  $\Omega(n/2^k)$  for the GIP function; this matches the upper bound, that is due to [Grolierz 1994].

Simultaneous protocols were defined in [Babai, Kimmel, and Lokam 1995]. Lemma 6.20 is from the work of [Håstad and Goldmann]. Examples 6.22 and 6.26 are by [Babai et al. 1995]. Similar results for different functions appear in [Pudlák and Rödl 1993].

**Cambridge Books Online**

<http://ebooks.cambridge.org/>



Communication Complexity

Eyal Kushilevitz, Noam Nisan

Book DOI: <http://dx.doi.org/10.1017/CBO9780511574948>

Online ISBN: 9780511574948

Hardback ISBN: 9780521560672

Paperback ISBN: 9780521029834

Chapter

7 - Variable Partition Models pp. 97-104

Chapter DOI: <http://dx.doi.org/10.1017/CBO9780511574948.008>

Cambridge University Press

# CHAPTER 7

## Variable Partition Models

---

In the standard two-party model the input  $(x, y)$  is partitioned in a fixed way. That is, Alice always gets  $x$  and Bob always gets  $y$ . In this chapter we discuss models in which the partition of the input among the players is not fixed. The main motivation for these models is that in many cases we wish to use communication complexity lower bounds to obtain lower bounds in other models of computation. This would typically require finding a communication complexity problem “hidden” somewhere in the computation that the model under consideration must perform. Because in such a model the input usually is not partitioned into two distinct sets  $x_1, \dots, x_n$  and  $y_1, \dots, y_n$ , such a partition must be given by the reduction. In some cases the partition can be figured out and *fixed*. In some other cases we must use arguments regarding *any* partition (of a certain kind). That is, we require a model where the partition is not fixed beforehand but the protocol determines the partition (independently of the particular input). Several such “variable partition models” are discussed in this chapter.

Throughout this chapter the input will be  $m$  Boolean variables  $x_1, \dots, x_m$ , and we consider functions  $f : \{0, 1\}^m \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$ . We will talk about the communication complexity of  $f$  between two disjoint sets of variables  $S$  and  $T$ . That is, one player gets all bits in  $S$  and the other all bits in  $T$ .

### 7.1. Worst-Case Partition

The simplest variable partition model we may consider is the “worst-case” partition: split the input into two sets in the way that maximizes the communication complexity.

**Definition 7.1:** Let  $f : \{0, 1\}^m \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$  be a function. Let  $S$  and  $T$  be a partition of the variables  $x_1, \dots, x_m$  into two disjoint sets. The (deterministic) communication complexity of  $f$  between  $S$  and  $T$ , denoted  $D^{S:T}(f)$ , is the complexity of computing  $f$  where Alice sees all bits in  $S$ , and Bob sees all bits in  $T$ . The worst-case communication complexity of  $f$ , denoted  $D^{\text{worst}}(f)$ , is the maximum of  $D^{S:T}(f)$  over all such partitions.

Note that for all  $f$ ,  $D^{worst}(f) \leq \frac{m}{2} + 1$  (because for any partition  $S : T$ , the player with the least number of bits can send them to the other player). Proving lower bounds for the worst-case communication complexity is quite simple because it suffices to find a single hard partition and then rely on techniques (and results) for the regular two-party model.

► **Example 7.2:** Let the function  $\text{PAL}_m(x_1, \dots, x_m)$  be 1 iff the string  $x_1 \dots x_m$  is a palindrome (that is, the string  $x_1 \dots x_m$  equals the string  $x_m \dots x_1$ ). Then  $D^{worst}(\text{PAL}_m) = \frac{m}{2} + 1$ . The hard partition is the first  $m/2$  bits versus the last  $m/2$  bits. Computing  $\text{PAL}_m$ , according to this partition, is equivalent to computing the function  $\text{EQ}$  on two  $m/2$ -bit strings (that is, check whether  $x_1 \dots x_{m/2} = x_m \dots x_{m/2+1}$ ). By the lower bound of Example 1.21, the result follows.

**Exercise 7.3:** Let the function  $f_m(x_1, \dots, x_m)$  be 1 iff the  $m$ -bit string  $x_1 \dots x_m$  contains two consecutive 1s. Prove that  $D^{worst}(f_m) = \Theta(m)$ .

► **Example 7.4:** Let  $\text{MAJ}_m$  be the majority function on  $m$ -bit strings. We show that  $D^{worst}(\text{MAJ}_m) = \log m$ . For the upper bound, let the player whose set in the partition is smaller send the number of 1s in its input ( $\log \frac{m}{2}$  bits) and the other player can compute the output. For the lower bound, we need to show a hard partition. Consider any partition  $S : T$  of the bits into two sets of size  $m/2$  (all such partitions are equivalent because the function is symmetric). Let  $n_1$  be the number of 1s in  $S$  and  $n_2$  be the number of 1s in  $T$ . Intuitively, the parties must simply check whether  $n_1 + n_2 > m/2$ , or equivalently whether  $n_1 > m/2 - n_2$ . This is simply the GT problem on  $(\log m - 1)$ -bit strings (formally, given  $\log \frac{m}{2}$ -bit inputs  $(i_1, i_2)$  to the GT function, Alice can produce a string with exactly  $i_1$  1s and Bob can produce a string with exactly  $m/2 - i_2$  1s. The output of  $\text{MAJ}_m$  on this string is exactly the output of  $\text{GT}(i_1, i_2)$ ). The required bounds for this function are given in Exercise 1.22.

A similar argument shows that  $D^{worst}(\text{TH}_m^k) = \log \min(k, m - k) + 1$ , where for an integer  $k$  (the “threshold”),  $\text{TH}_m^k$  is a function that gives 1 iff at least  $k$  of the  $m$  input bits are 1s.

We can also talk about variable partitions for multiparty communication complexity (where “multiparty” refers to the “number on the forehead” model discussed in Chapter 6).

**Definition 7.5:** The  $k$ -party worst-case communication complexity of  $f$ ,  $D^{worst k\text{-party}}(f)$ , is the worst-case multiparty communication complexity over all partitions of the variables of  $f$  into  $k$  disjoint subsets (where each player sees the variables in  $k - 1$  of these subsets).

► **Example 7.6:** Recall Lemma 6.20. In our terms it states the following: Fix a ring  $R$ , and let  $p : R^m \rightarrow R$  be a polynomial in  $R[x_1, \dots, x_m]$  of degree  $d$ . Then,  $D^{worst(d+1)\text{-party}}(p) \leq d \log |R|$ . (Here the input is  $m$  elements of  $R$ . These  $m$  elements are partitioned among the players and not the  $m \log |R|$  bits representing them.)

Below we prove lower bounds for stronger variable partition models. All these lower bounds also apply to the worst-case partition complexity.

## 7.2. Best-Case Partition

In many cases we are faced with models that may choose the locations in that input variables are accessed (in some specific sense depending on the model) according to the function that must be computed. In some cases lower bounds in the model would only follow if all partitions (of a certain kind) yield hard communication complexity problems. The simplest way to capture this is the following model:

**Definition 7.7:** Let  $f(x_1, \dots, x_m)$  be a function. The best-case communication complexity of  $f$ ,  $D^{best}(f)$ , is the minimum  $D^{S:T}(f)$  over all partitions of  $x_1, \dots, x_m$  into two sets  $S, T$  of equal size.

Note that here we insist that  $S$  and  $T$  are of equal size (as opposed to the “worst partition” case where they could be of any size) because otherwise the partition of all the variables versus none of them clearly has 0 complexity. Lower bounds for the best-case complexity do not follow directly from the two-party model because we must argue somehow that *all* partitions are hard. Indeed, in some cases in the best partition the problem is much easier than in the worst partition:

- **Example 7.8:**  $D^{best}(\text{PAL}_m) = 2$  (in contrast, Example 7.2 shows that  $D^{worst}(\text{PAL}_m) = \frac{m}{2} + 1$ ). An easy partition is the second and third quarters of the bits versus the first and last quarters. Alice simply verifies that the second quarter is the reverse of the third quarter, and Bob verifies that the first quarter is the reverse of the last quarter. They output 1 iff both tests succeed, which requires one bit of communication from each.

For some functions there is no big difference between the various partitions. For example, consider the function  $\text{MAJ}_m$  (Example 7.4). By the symmetry of the function all the partitions of bits into two equal size sets are equivalent. Example 7.4 therefore shows that  $D^{best}(\text{MAJ}_m) = \log m$ . Next we show a more interesting example, and a technique that is often very useful.

- **Example 7.9:** For  $x, y \in \{0, 1\}^n$  and  $0 \leq i \leq n - 1$ , define the “shifted equality” function  $\text{SEQ}(x, y, i)$  to be 1 iff the string  $x = x_0x_1 \dots x_{n-1}$  equals to the string  $y$  shifted circularly by  $i$ -bits to the right, that is to  $y_iy_{i+1} \dots y_{n-1}y_0 \dots y_{i-1}$ . In other words,  $\text{SEQ}(x, y, i) = 1$  iff for all  $0 \leq j < n$ ,  $x_j = y_{i+j \bmod n}$ . Then  $D^{best}(\text{SEQ}) = \Omega(m)$ , where  $m = 2n + \log n$  is the size of the input.

As is the case in Example 7.8, for certain partitions checking equality may be easy. The idea will be to show that for some values of  $i$  the bits are partitioned between the players in a way that makes the equality-test “hard.” First, observe that each of the two players holds a “significant” number of bits from a different string. To see this, note that each player gets  $\frac{m}{2} = n + \frac{1}{2} \log n$  bits, out of them at least  $n - \frac{1}{2} \log n$  are bits of

either  $x$  or  $y$ . Without loss of generality, Alice holds  $\frac{n}{2}$  bits of  $x$ , and hence Bob holds at least  $k = \frac{n}{2} - \frac{1}{2} \log n$  bits of  $y$ . Let  $A \subseteq \{0, 1, \dots, n-1\}$  be  $k$  bits of  $x_0, \dots, x_{n-1}$  held by Alice, and  $B \subseteq \{0, 1, \dots, n-1\}$  be  $k$  bits of  $y_0, \dots, y_{n-1}$  held by Bob (each player possibly holds other bits as well from  $x$ ,  $y$ , and  $i$ ).

Consider the special case where all bits of  $x$  and  $y$  not in  $A$  and  $B$  (respectively) are 0s (as we are proving a lower bound, we are allowed to restrict the input). We are now going to fix the value of  $i$  in a way that yields high communication complexity between Alice and Bob. For this, let us see what is the communication complexity for some *fixed* value of  $i$ . Denote  $B_i = \{j | (i + j \bmod n) \in B\}$ . We claim that for any fixed  $i$ , the communication complexity between  $A$  and  $B$  is at least  $|A \cap B_i|$ . To see this, we further restrict the input by letting  $x_j = 0$  and  $y_{i+j \bmod n} = 0$ , for all  $j \notin A \cap B_i$ . Now observe that the induced function is 1 iff for all  $j \in A \cap B_i$ ,  $x_j = y_{i+j \bmod n}$ . Because  $j \in A$  the bit  $x_j$  is held by Alice, and because  $j \in B_i$ , we have  $(i + j \bmod n) \in B$ , that is, the bit  $y_{i+j \bmod n}$  is held by Bob (and none of these bits is already fixed). By the lower bound for EQ (Example 1.21) applied to strings of length  $|A \cap B_i|$ , the claim follows (in the sense that a better protocol for this problem implies a protocol for EQ whose communication complexity is better than the lower bound). Finally, it remains to show that for some  $i$ ,  $|A \cap B_i| = \Omega(m)$ . For this, we write

$$\sum_i |A \cap B_i| = \sum_{j \in A} |\{i | j \in B_i\}|$$

(to see this, think of a matrix whose rows are  $j \in A$  and columns are the sets  $B_i$ ; The entry  $(j, B_i)$  is 1 if  $j \in B_i$  and 0 otherwise. With this view, the right-hand term of the equality counts the 1s of this matrix row-by-row, whereas the left-hand term counts the 1s column-by-column). Now,

$$\sum_{j \in A} |\{i | j \in B_i\}| = |A| \cdot |B| = k^2.$$

Hence, for some  $i$  we have  $|A \cap B_i| \geq k^2/k = k = \Omega(m)$ , as needed.

**Exercise 7.10:** Let `MATCH` be the function that accepts a  $3m$ -bit string  $x$  and an  $m$ -bit string  $y$  and returns 1 iff  $y$  is a substring of  $x$ . Prove that  $D^{\text{best}}(\text{MATCH}) = \Omega(m)$ .

**Exercise 7.11:** Let `sum(a,b,i)` be the function that takes two  $n$ -bit integers  $a, b$  and a  $\log n$ -bit integer  $i$  and returns the  $i$ -th bit of the binary representation of the sum  $a + b$  (the length of the input is  $m = 2n + \log n$ ). Similarly, let `prod(a,b,i)` be the function that takes the same inputs and returns the  $i$ -th bit of the product  $a \cdot b$ . Prove

1.  $D^{\text{best}}(\text{SUM}) = O(\log m)$ ; but
- 2\*.  $D^{\text{best}}(\text{PROD}) = \Omega(m/\log(m))$ .

We may think of several generalizations of  $D^{\text{best}}$ . Perhaps the most natural one is to allow partitions into two sets that are not exactly of equal size, but only approximately so. Say, each set must hold at least a third of the input bits. Lower bounds for such a generalization may be proved in similar ways as for  $D^{\text{best}}$  but may be used more easily in proving lower bounds in some models. A generalization that is significantly stronger

is considered in the next section. Thus, the lower bounds proven below directly imply lower bounds on  $D^{best}$ .

### 7.3. Best Partition with Information Overlap

Let  $S$  and  $T$  be two disjoint subsets of  $x_1, \dots, x_m$ , which do not necessarily cover all the variables. The definition of  $D^{S:T}(f)$  (Definition 7.1) can be extended to be the complexity of computing  $f$  where Alice sees all bits in  $S$ , Bob sees all bits in  $T$ , and all bits not in  $S \cup T$  are seen by *both* Alice and Bob. This is equivalent to the maximum over all possible values for the bits not in  $S \cup T$  of the communication complexity of the induced function on the variables of  $S \cup T$ .

**Definition 7.12:** Let  $f : \{0, 1\}^m \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$  be a function. The  $n$ -best communication complexity of  $f$ ,  $D^{n-best}(f)$ , is the minimum of  $D^{S:T}(f)$  over all disjoint sets  $S, T$  of size  $n$  each.

By the definitions,  $D^{best}(f) = D^{m/2-best}(f)$ . In some cases, the overlap of information may be very useful. For example, the function SEQ (Example 7.9) can be computed with  $O(1)$  bits as long as each player holds at most  $n/2$  bits (and the rest are common). This is because partitions in which the two players get, say, only bits of  $x$  (and  $y$  and  $i$  are common) are easy; each player checks for every bit  $x_j$  that he holds whether  $x_j = y_{i+j \bmod n}$ .

- **Example 7.13:** Consider the function  $\text{MAJ}_m$  defined in Example 7.4. We show that  $D^{n-best}(\text{MAJ}_m) = \log n$ . For the upper bound, notice that for any setting of the bits not in  $S \cup T$  (which are known by both parties) a protocol for  $\text{MAJ}_m$  can start by Alice sending to Bob the number of 1s in her part of the input ( $\log n$  bits), and Bob can then compute the value of the function. Because the function is symmetric, the choice of  $S$  and  $T$  does not matter. To prove the lower bound, it suffices to exhibit some setting for variables not in  $S \cup T$  that gives complexity  $\log n$ . For example, set exactly half of these variables to 0 and half to 1. This returns us to the case of majority on  $n$  variables, and because the function is symmetric this is the same as in Example 7.4.
- **Example 7.14:** Let  $\text{ED}$  be the element distinctness function: its input is  $k$  integers in the range  $0, 1, \dots, 4k - 1$  (thus, each integer is given by  $\log(4k)$  bits). It returns 1 iff all  $k$  integers are distinct. We show that, for all  $n$ ,  $D^{n-best}(\text{ED}) = \Omega(n/\log m)$ , where  $m = k(\log k + 2)$  is the size of the input (in particular,  $D^{best}(\text{ED}) = \Omega(m/\log m)$ ).

Let  $S$  and  $T$  be two disjoint sets of  $n$  bits each. Each of these bits is the  $j$ -th coordinate (for some  $0 \leq j < \log(4k)$ ) of one of the  $k$  numbers. Let  $j_S$  be the coordinate most often used in  $S$  and  $j_T$  be the coordinate most often used in  $T$ . Let  $A$  be the subset of the  $k$  input numbers for which  $S$  contains the  $j_S$ -th coordinate. Similarly, let  $B$  be the subset of the  $k$  input numbers for which  $T$  contains the  $j_T$ -th coordinate. Then,  $|A| \geq n/\log(4k)$  and  $|B| \geq n/\log(4k)$ . Without loss of generality, we assume that the sizes are actually equal (otherwise, we simply reduce the larger of  $A$  and  $B$ ). We also assume that  $A$  and

|       |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |
|-------|---|---|-------|---|---|---|---|-------|---|---|---|---|-------|---|---|---|---|-------|---|---|---|---|-------|---|---|---|---|-------|---|---|---|-------|---|---|-------|---|---|---|---|-------|---|---|---|---|-------|---|---|---|---|-------|---|---|---|---|-------|---|---|---|---|-------|---|---|---|
| $A =$ | <table border="1"> <tr><td>0</td><td><math>a_1</math></td><td>0</td><td>0</td><td>0</td></tr> <tr><td>0</td><td><math>a_2</math></td><td>0</td><td>0</td><td>1</td></tr> <tr><td>0</td><td><math>a_3</math></td><td>0</td><td>1</td><td>0</td></tr> <tr><td>0</td><td><math>a_4</math></td><td>0</td><td>1</td><td>1</td></tr> <tr><td>0</td><td><math>a_5</math></td><td>1</td><td>0</td><td>0</td></tr> <tr><td>0</td><td><math>a_6</math></td><td>1</td><td>0</td><td>1</td></tr> </table> | 0 | $a_1$ | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | $a_2$ | 0 | 0 | 1 | 0 | $a_3$ | 0 | 1 | 0 | 0 | $a_4$ | 0 | 1 | 1 | 0 | $a_5$ | 1 | 0 | 0 | 0 | $a_6$ | 1 | 0 | 1 | $B =$ | <table border="1"> <tr><td>0</td><td><math>b_1</math></td><td>0</td><td>0</td><td>0</td></tr> <tr><td>0</td><td><math>b_2</math></td><td>0</td><td>0</td><td>1</td></tr> <tr><td>0</td><td><math>b_3</math></td><td>0</td><td>1</td><td>0</td></tr> <tr><td>0</td><td><math>b_4</math></td><td>0</td><td>1</td><td>1</td></tr> <tr><td>0</td><td><math>b_5</math></td><td>1</td><td>0</td><td>0</td></tr> <tr><td>0</td><td><math>b_6</math></td><td>1</td><td>0</td><td>1</td></tr> </table> | 0 | $b_1$ | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | $b_2$ | 0 | 0 | 1 | 0 | $b_3$ | 0 | 1 | 0 | 0 | $b_4$ | 0 | 1 | 1 | 0 | $b_5$ | 1 | 0 | 0 | 0 | $b_6$ | 1 | 0 | 1 |
| 0     | $a_1$   | 0 | 0     | 0 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |
| 0     | $a_2$   | 0 | 0     | 1 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |
| 0     | $a_3$   | 0 | 1     | 0 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |
| 0     | $a_4$   | 0 | 1     | 1 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |
| 0     | $a_5$   | 1 | 0     | 0 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |
| 0     | $a_6$   | 1 | 0     | 1 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |
| 0     | $b_1$   | 0 | 0     | 0 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |
| 0     | $b_2$   | 0 | 0     | 1 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |
| 0     | $b_3$   | 0 | 1     | 0 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |
| 0     | $b_4$   | 0 | 1     | 1 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |
| 0     | $b_5$   | 1 | 0     | 0 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |
| 0     | $b_6$   | 1 | 0     | 1 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |

**Figure 7.1:** Case 1 ( $j = j_S = j_T = 2$ ); Reducing EQ to ED

|       |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |
|-------|---|---|-------|---|---|---|---|-------|---|---|---|---|-------|---|---|---|---|-------|---|---|---|---|-------|---|---|---|---|-------|---|---|---|-------|---|---|---|---|-------|---|---|---|---|-------|---|---|---|---|-------|---|---|---|---|-------|---|---|---|---|-------|---|---|---|---|-------|---|
| $A =$ | <table border="1"> <tr><td>0</td><td><math>a_1</math></td><td>0</td><td>1</td><td>0</td></tr> <tr><td>0</td><td><math>a_2</math></td><td>0</td><td>1</td><td>1</td></tr> <tr><td>0</td><td><math>a_3</math></td><td>1</td><td>1</td><td>0</td></tr> <tr><td>0</td><td><math>a_4</math></td><td>1</td><td>1</td><td>1</td></tr> <tr><td>1</td><td><math>a_5</math></td><td>0</td><td>1</td><td>0</td></tr> <tr><td>1</td><td><math>a_6</math></td><td>0</td><td>1</td><td>1</td></tr> </table> | 0 | $a_1$ | 0 | 1 | 0 | 0 | $a_2$ | 0 | 1 | 1 | 0 | $a_3$ | 1 | 1 | 0 | 0 | $a_4$ | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | $a_5$ | 0 | 1 | 0 | 1 | $a_6$ | 0 | 1 | 1 | $B =$ | <table border="1"> <tr><td>0</td><td>1</td><td>0</td><td><math>b_1</math></td><td>0</td></tr> <tr><td>0</td><td>1</td><td>0</td><td><math>b_2</math></td><td>1</td></tr> <tr><td>0</td><td>1</td><td>1</td><td><math>b_3</math></td><td>0</td></tr> <tr><td>0</td><td>1</td><td>1</td><td><math>b_4</math></td><td>1</td></tr> <tr><td>1</td><td>1</td><td>0</td><td><math>b_5</math></td><td>0</td></tr> <tr><td>1</td><td>1</td><td>0</td><td><math>b_6</math></td><td>1</td></tr> </table> | 0 | 1 | 0 | $b_1$ | 0 | 0 | 1 | 0 | $b_2$ | 1 | 0 | 1 | 1 | $b_3$ | 0 | 0 | 1 | 1 | $b_4$ | 1 | 1 | 1 | 0 | $b_5$ | 0 | 1 | 1 | 0 | $b_6$ | 1 |
| 0     | $a_1$   | 0 | 1     | 0 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |
| 0     | $a_2$   | 0 | 1     | 1 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |
| 0     | $a_3$   | 1 | 1     | 0 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |
| 0     | $a_4$   | 1 | 1     | 1 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |
| 1     | $a_5$   | 0 | 1     | 0 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |
| 1     | $a_6$   | 0 | 1     | 1 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |
| 0     | 1   | 0 | $b_1$ | 0 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |
| 0     | 1   | 0 | $b_2$ | 1 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |
| 0     | 1   | 1 | $b_3$ | 0 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |
| 0     | 1   | 1 | $b_4$ | 1 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |
| 1     | 1   | 0 | $b_5$ | 0 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |
| 1     | 1   | 0 | $b_6$ | 1 |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |   |   |   |       |   |

**Figure 7.2:** Case 2 ( $j_S = 2, j_T = 4$ ); Reducing DISJ to ED

$B$  are disjoint. Otherwise, we split common elements equally between the two sets (this may reduce the size of  $A$  and  $B$  by a factor of at most two).

We now fix all input bits, except for the  $j_S$ -th and  $j_T$ -th coordinates of the numbers in  $A \cup B$ , as follows: For all  $0 \leq i < |A|$ , the  $i$ -th number in  $A$  and the  $i$ -th number in  $B$  get the binary representation of  $i$  (padded with 0s) written in the coordinates excluding  $j_S$  and  $j_T$  (see Figures 7.1 and 7.2). All numbers not in  $A \cup B$  get unique binary representations of numbers larger than  $|A| - 1$  written in these coordinates. This is possible since there are (at least)  $\log k$  “free” coordinates and only  $k$  numbers. For numbers not in  $A \cup B$  we also fix the  $j_S$ -th and  $j_T$ -th coordinate to 0. Notice that these restrictions already ensure that the only equalities between input numbers that may occur are between the  $i$ -th number in  $A$  and the  $i$ -th number in  $B$ , for some  $i$ . For all other pairs, inequality is ensured. We distinguish two cases, whether  $j_S = j_T$  or not.

Case 1:  $j_S = j_T = j$  (see Figure 7.1). In this case ED is 1 if and only if for all  $0 \leq i < |A|$ , the  $j$ -th bit in the  $i$ -th number in  $A$  is equal to the complement of the  $j$ -th bit in the  $i$ -th number in  $B$ . This problem is equivalent to the equality function (EQ) on  $|A|$ -bit strings, for which we have the required lower bound of  $|A|$  (Example 1.21).

Case 2:  $j_S \neq j_T$  (see Figure 7.2). We further restrict the input by fixing the  $j_S$ -th coordinate of all numbers in  $B$  to 1, and the  $j_T$ -th coordinate of all numbers in  $A$  to 1. Now ED is 0 if and only if for some  $0 \leq i < |A|$ , the  $j_S$ -th bit in the  $i$ -th number in  $A$  (held by Alice) is 1 and also the  $j_T$ -th bit in the  $i$ -th number in  $B$  (held by Bob) is 1. This is equivalent to the disjointness function (DISJ) on subsets of  $1, \dots, |A|$ , for which again we have the required lower bound of  $|A|$  (Example 1.23).

**Exercise 7.15\***: The undirected  $s - t$ -connectivity problem, USTCON, accepts as input a graph on  $\ell$  vertices (that is,  $m = \binom{\ell}{2}$  input bits representing the edges), and outputs 1 if and only if there exists a path between vertices  $s$  and  $t$  in the input graph ( $s \neq t$ ). Prove that for all  $n$ ,  $D^{n-best}(\text{USTCON}) = \Omega(n/\ell)$ . Conclude that  $D^{best}(\text{USTCON}) = \Omega(\sqrt{m})$ .

## 7.4. Bibliographic Notes

The *Best-Case Partition* model was introduced by [Papadimitriou and Sipser 1982], and in fact many results in communication complexity were first introduced in this model. It was heavily used for proving lower bounds for VLSI [Lengauer 1990, Chu and Schnitger 1991] (also see references in [Lengauer 1990], as well as Section 8.3 below). In particular, the technique used in Example 7.9 was developed in this context.

In [Lam and Ruzzo 1989] a general transformation is given from a fixed partition to the *best* partition. The  $n$ -*best* complexity is implicit in [Alon and Maass 1986]. Exercise 7.15 is implicit in [Meinel and Waack 1994]. The graph connectivity problem in the best partition case was considered in [Hajnal, Maass, and Turan 1988]. Other graph theoretic problems were considered, for example, in [Ďuriš and Pudlák 1989].

The definitions given in this chapter can be extended in various ways. In particular, there is no special reason to discuss only the deterministic case and we may define in a similar way measures like  $R^{worst}(f)$  (the randomized communication complexity of  $f$  with respect to the worst partition), and so forth.

